

## Prologue

‘Alright’ Kevin said at last, ‘alright.’

Justin turned to him, a strange look in his eye.

‘I know what happened before was my fault, so I am the one who can make it right.’

Justin continued to stare at him, he did not move.

‘I um...’ Kevin began, hunching his shoulders. ‘You can have me’ he said, forcing the words from his mouth. ‘You can...make love to me.’

‘I don’t’ make love’ Justin answered shortly. ‘Love implies tenderness, affection. I don’t care for relationships, nor do I have time for them.’

He approached Kevin then, causing him to tense up then.

‘I only care about raw hard sex’ he spoke in a seductive voice.

Kevin swallowed the lump in his throat, feeling suddenly out of his depths.

‘Its true that you owe me after what you did’ Justin said to him, ‘but are you willing to give me what I want? Are you willing to give me the only thing that will make it better?’

‘Ah...’ Kevin breathed glancing away. ‘Yes.’

‘Alicia warned you about me’ Justin spoke in a level voice, ‘didn’t he?’

‘...Y-yes’ Kevin said.

‘I’m big’ Justin spoke seriously, ‘and rough. He could handle me, I doubt you can.’

Kevin began to flush then, feeling a little lost, unsure of what to say.

‘If the offer stands’ Justin said, reaching out to caress his face tenderly, ‘I’d really like to fuck you tonight.’

Kevin’s heart beat hard in his chest, so much it began to hurt.

‘Come with me’ Justin said backing away then, turning and walking up the stairs. ‘I want to show you something.’

Kevin breathed a heavy sigh as Justin walked away, bowing his head before glancing up towards Justin again.

He followed him up the stairs.

Justin led him to his bedroom, a large room with a king-size bed. It was dark outside now, the light in the town beyond dim in the cloudy night.

Kevin lingered in the doorway as Justin moved over to a chest of drawers.

He opened the top draw, and Kevin’s heart froze in his chest as he saw, one by one, the things that Justin pulled out, placing each one after the other, upon the top.

Whips, ropes, ball-gags, a human-muzzle, handcuffs.

Kevin’s heart dropped in his chest.

‘We won’t use any of these yet’ Justin said. ‘For now, we’ll just do it straight.’

He turned back to Kevin, who lifted his eyes, meeting Justin’s

‘Are you frightened?’ Justin asked him.

‘No’ Kevin answered quietly.

‘You look it.’

Kevin averted his eyes.

‘You want to make it up to me’ Justin said to him, approaching him. ‘You want to let me come inside you, like you let....’ He trailed off.

‘I didn’t mean for that to happen’ Kevin whispered, trying to control his nerves. ‘But I...’

‘Did you like it?’ Justin asked him. ‘Did you like being penetrated. Did it feel good?’  
‘Um...’ Kevin answered, his voice breaking. ‘Yes’ he said at last. ‘It felt.... good...strange...at first.....I’ve never.... I....’  
‘So you liked it?’ Justin asked.  
‘.... Yes.’  
‘Doing it with me will be very different’ Justin said seriously. ‘I like it.... hard. I like to....’ He balled his fists, ‘fuck so hard.....’ he turned his heavy eyes back onto Kevin. ‘I want to do it with you’ he said. ‘You have to consent to it, you have to say yes. But once you agree, you cannot back down. If you say yes, I will do what I want with you until I am finished. Do you understand?’  
Kevin blinked uncertainly up at him.  
‘You said that I can have you’ Justin told him. ‘Know that I like it rough.’ He paused. ‘I need to know its consensual. I need you to say yes.’  
Kevin hunched his shoulders, glancing towards the chest of drawers, where there lay the ropes and others things that Justin had put there.  
He glanced towards Justin who stood before him, waiting patiently for his answer.  
Kevin drew a deep breath, swallowing the lump in his throat.  
‘Yes’ he spoke, in a loud and clear voice.  
Justin bowed his head, blinking slowly.

## Chapter One

### The Contract

The café was fairly quiet around them. Kevin bowed his head, looking down at the contract before him, eyes moving back and forth as he skimmed the words.  
The man across the table from him watched silently, leaning forwards on his elbows with his fingers woven together.  
Kevin glanced up at the man sitting at the table opposite him, doing so only briefly, so his attention didn’t linger, so he didn’t draw attention.  
Kevin found the guy kind of shady, the way he sat there with his collar turned up, his hood raised, and the dark sunglasses which covered his eyes.  
Justin Miles was a famous model and actor, everyone knew his name. But there had been an incident that had been covered up, and no one knew the details for sure, though there were a lot of rumours. The actor had fallen on hard times and had lost a great deal of money. He had gone silent after that and had not accepted any work for a long time. He had done everything he could to try to make the problems go away, his agent had advised him to lay low, that was several months ago.  
*And now here he is* Kevin thought to himself. *I never imagined the ad for the tenant wanted would be from this guy, he really must be struggling...I wonder what his place looks like. I*

*bet it's in shambles. Oh well...can't be that bad surely.* He paused for a moment in thought. *I wonder what the rumours were.....I never did find out...*

'You believe who I really am don't you?' the man called Justin asked him.

'Oh' Kevin fumbled, 'I...yeah...I do.'

Kevin saw Justin frown then, the edge of his lip turned down slightly, and his brow furrowed.

'I have to keep a low profile a lot of the time' Justin said, 'I just want a normal life you know?'

'Uh...yeah...' Kevin said.

'And don't tell anyone who I really am, you got that?'

'Uh...yeah...'

'So, are you going to sign the contract or what?'

'Uh yeah' Kevin said, 'I'm just reading the last bit.'

'And stop saying *uh yeah*, it's annoying.'

Kevin glanced up uncertainly at the man.

*He's kind of intimidating.*

'You understand the rules?' Justin asked him.

'Yeah I understand the rules' Kevin smiled awkwardly in response. 'I only get one chance.'

'That's right' Justin replied. 'No pets, no parties, no noise after eleven. Piss me off and you get kicked out without any second chances.'

*Man, this guy's intense* Kevin thought glumly. *But...I need a place to stay.....*

'Ok' Kevin replied, 'seems fair.' *Hardly* he added silently in his head. 'I just sign here right?'

'Just hurry up' Justin groaned.

Kevin signed his signature along the dotted line, and as soon as he had, Justin whipped the paper out from under him.

'Good' Justin said, folding the contract up quickly and rising to his feet. 'So, are you ready to see the place?'

'Yes of course' Kevin forced a smile, trying to act casual.

They left the café, Kevin walking a step behind Justin as he walked quickly. They stopped at the lights, waiting for the man to turn green.

'So where's your stuff?' Justin asked, standing there with his hands in his pockets.

'It's...' Kevin replied, 'at home. It won't take me long to move, I don't own a lot...just a few books and clothes.'

Justin slowly turned to face him then, wearing a frown upon his face.

Kevin smiled innocently back at him.

*What kind of a guy wears sunglasses in winter? It's not even sunny, man what douche.*

'So why are you moving out?' Justin asked him. 'You don't have any *problems*, do you? Any emotional family issues? I'd hate to have to deal with that crap...'

Kevin stared at him, seeing his own face staring back from the reflection of Justin's sunglasses. He caught himself then, realising Justin would be expecting a reply.

'Oh no it's nothing like that' Kevin spoke hastily with a smile. 'I'm adopted you see, both my parents died when I was a baby so I don't remember anything about them. My adopted parents have been good to me my whole life...I don't want to be a burden on them anymore, so I'm moving out...that's all' he finished awkwardly.

'Hm' Justin replied shortly. 'How old are you?'

‘Twenty.’

‘I’m twenty-nine’ Justin replied turning away.

Kevin let out a silent sigh, looking back at his feet.

A few seconds passed and Justin stepped forward. The man had turned green, and they crossed the road.

‘So, do you live near here?’

Justin glanced back at him, in a look that wasn’t exactly friendly.

‘Are you trying to get to know me?’ Justin asked.

‘No? I was just wondering how far we have to walk.’

Justin looked ahead again.

‘It’s just a few minutes’ he replied, ‘not far now...’

A short while later they reached a tall block of flats in a beautiful part of the town. It was fairly quiet here, and the docks nearby were serene, the waters clean. Everything was peaceful. The space they came to was spacious, little flowerbeds alongside the path spilled delicate purple flowers. The sea was not far away, and the smell of the fresh salty breeze was in the air.

*I guess he does still have some money left, this is a pricy part of town* Kevin thought as he glanced about. *I guess it’s a good sign, his flat must be pretty nice too.*

They entered the foyer of the building, going past the reception desk and heading to the lifts.

‘I suppose your place is on the top floor’ Kevin commented, entering the lift after Justin.

‘As a matter of fact, it is’ Justin replied curtly, pressing the button for the top floor, the doors closing and trapping them in the tiny space together.

Kevin tilted his head as the lift went up quickly, painfully aware of their close proximity in the small lift.

*You think a building with this many apartments would have a larger lift* Kevin thought bitterly.

The lift slowed to a stop and the doors played a short and pleasant tune as they opened again, and an automated female voice called the floor they were on.

There was only one short corridor here, with only a few doors, their surfaces a shining red with silver handles.

Kevin followed Justin as he went one of the doors at the end of the corridor, bringing out a single key and unlocking the door.

He stepped in, and Kevin for the first time got to see the place he would be staying.

‘Woah...’ he gasped, unable to help himself. ‘This place is incredible!’

At was a large open space, everything designed with a modern style, everything matching. Downstairs was just a simple large open room, a kitchen on one side, wide sofas in the middle, and stairs leading up to a balcony above, where there were only two doors that Kevin could see. The windows were large, letting the light spill into the room, and there were a few potted plants here and there, their leaves lush and green. Everything was clean and tidy, and as Kevin glanced about him at the bookshelves beside him, he saw not a speck of dust anywhere.

Kevin turned his attention onto Justin then, who stood in the centre of it all, hand on his hip and frowning at Kevin in annoyance.

‘Are you just going to stand there? Shut the door’ he said, and Kevin quickly obliged.

‘So, um...how much did you say rent was again?’ Kevin asked tentatively.

‘As stated on the contract. Single payment every month, no catches, no strings attached. Just follow the rules.’

‘Hold on a sec’ Kevin stopped him as Justin made to move away. ‘That’s incredibly cheap for a place this size...wait...I’ve got a proper room, haven’t I? I mean I’m not staying in a cupboard or anything?’

Justin moved away, heading to a door nearby and opening it.

‘This is your room’ Justin said, indicating.

Kevin shuffled forward tentatively but was surprised to see it was not a cupboard sized room, but was just as the rest of the apartment. It was massive, empty, but massive, with a modern and tasteful design, and clean. The room smelt new and unused, and there were fresh sheets on the bed. The double bed by the back wall and a few cupboards were all that were in there, and the room was dark, the floor to ceiling windows covered by thick curtains now.

‘*This* is my room?’

‘I just need a bit of extra cash to help things along’ Justin said. ‘That’s all.’

Kevin gave a stoic glance to Justin then.

‘Are you going to murder me or something? If I have a look under the bed will there be the remains of the last tenant?’

‘You watch too much horror’ Justin said, letting the door swing open. ‘I’m going to make some food’ he said moving away.

Kevin watched him go, before turning back to the room.

He stepped inside. The first thing he did was to draw the curtains, letting the sunlight flood into the room.

He checked the drawers which were empty, checking under the bed, before sitting on the bed itself and bouncing up and down. It was comfortable, and the sheets were soft.

Kevin paused then, looking back through the open bedroom door and into the main room of the apartment, where Justin was bustling about the kitchen.

Kevin listened to the sounds of things being moved in the kitchen, remaining where he was for a moment before rising and moving back across the room and towards the door.

He stood on the threshold with his hand upon the frame, seeing Justin properly for the first time.

He couldn’t help but let out a small gasp.

Justin had lowered his hood, his collar turned down and the sunglasses upon the kitchen counter. His features could be seen clearly now.

He had bright blonde hair, artificially dyed, and was short and wavy on the top and long and wavy on the bottom, the long strands resting upon his shoulders. He was incredibly handsome, his features flawless and eyes shining bright.

He was a mature figure, with a serious expression, and skin like porcelain.

Kevin continued to stare with his mouth open slightly and eyes unblinking.

Kevin suddenly thought then, that if Justin smiled, he would be far more....

*Beautiful...*

Justin stopped suddenly; looking up with a frown of annoyance as he realised Kevin was staring at him.

‘What?!’

‘Oh! Nothing!’ Kevin fumbled in reply, turning away hastily, but glancing back moments later.

‘You can eat whatever food is in this house’ Justin was saying, taking plates out of the cupboard and dishing up the food, ‘just tell me when something runs out. Ok?’

‘Sure’ Kevin mumbled

He approached the table cautiously, seeing what Justin had cooked up. It was stir fry, quick and easy to make.

‘So, you’re a good cook then?’ Kevin tested.

‘No’ Justin replied flatly. ‘But I can make this.’ He walked away then suddenly without warning, heading towards the front door.

‘Where are you going?’ Kevin asked.

‘I’ve got to go out, I’ve got things to do.’

‘What about the food?’

‘I’ll eat it when I get back’ Justin replied briskly, before snapping the door shut and vanishing.

Kevin stood there in the ringing silence, feeling a little lost, in the massive apartment.

‘So, what’s he like?’

Kevin frowned, groaning slightly. ‘Well...’ he said, ‘he’s sort of intense, but he seems nice enough...I suppose...’

His friend Christina watched him with an unconvinced expression, frowning back at him.

‘You know if you’re ever uncomfortable or anything you can stay at my place.’

‘Yeah, I know’ Kevin mumbled, ‘but I don’t want to be a burden or anything.’

‘Hardly. You know you could never be a burden on me.’

They were now in Kevin’s home, the one he was moving out of. His friend Christina had come over to help him move his possessions over to the new place.

‘That’s kind of you to offer though’ Kevin said to her, ‘but I want to make my own way in this world and crashing with friends for free isn’t the way to go. Plus, you rent, and you’re not allowed tenants.’

‘It’s ok if it’s only short-term.’

‘Exactly.’

Christina tilted her head at him, her glossy blonde hair falling over her shoulders.

‘You need to learn that it’s ok to ask people for help sometimes’ she told him.

‘I know that’ Kevin sighed wearily, ‘I just...want to do things on my own if I can...’

‘Sure.’

It only took a short amount of time to gather Kevin's things, mostly it was just clothes. They managed to fit all the stuff he wanted to take with him into two large boxes, carrying one each down the stairs. They left them by the door as Kevin went to say goodbye to his parents.

'You know you can come home any time' his mother said hugging him.

'I know mum' he smiled as he held her back, 'but I'm not a kid anymore.'

'Come visit us whenever you can' his father said, extending a hand to Kevin for him to shake. 'You know we'll always be here for you.'

Kevin made his farewells, leaving the house with Christina close beside him.

She was facing away from him now, sniffing sadly.

'Oh, Christina come one, don't get sad. I'm still close to home.'

'I know it's just...' she sniffed again, eyes teary. 'Your family are so sweet...they're going to miss you so much I'm sure...my family hardly noticed I was gone.'

Kevin turned to her then.

Christiana had had an abusive family, and a difficult past. She had run away from home at the age of thirteen, staying with a friend. She had gotten a job, working hard when she wasn't in school so she could afford a place of her own, a dream which eventually became a reality. She had her own small apartment now, though it was a little old and shabby, she had made it warm and welcoming.

'I can't wait to see this new place of yours' she gleamed at him. 'I love moving house and decorating and stuff...'

'Well there's not much to decorate I'm afraid' Kevin told her as they walked along the street, each with a cardboard box in their hands, 'the place is pretty nice. The guys rich and rent is cheap...he says he only wants a little to help him along. I was actually incredibly lucky to get this offer.'

'I'll say' Christina gleamed at him, looking evermore beautiful. 'Never allow a good opportunity to slip away...that's what I've learned.'

Kevin paused then, turning to face her. 'Are you sure you don't want to take a bus? It's a bit of a long walk, an hour at least by foot, and with these boxes...'

'It's a lovely day' Christina beamed at him. 'I *want* to walk.'

'Fine' Kevin said turning away. 'Suit yourself.'

They stopped about half an hour or so later outside a corner shop, sitting on a low wall by the road outside. Kevin had been left the guard the boxes, while Christina ran inside to get them refreshments.

She arrived minutes later with a small bottle of water each and pack of sandwiches to share.

'Chicken Orleans' Kevin grinned excitedly as she sat beside him. 'I love that sandwich.'

'I know' she spoke in a playful voice. 'Of course I do.'

She tucked her skirt beneath her as she sat close beside him, taking out one of the sandwich pieces and feeding it to him. Kevin opened his mouth wide as she did, biting down into the bread.

'You're so messy' she giggled, using a napkin to dap at his mouth.

Kevin smirked at her, taking the napkin from her as she took her own sandwich piece.

'Aaahh' Kevin sighed then, leaning back and staring up at the gorgeous blue sky above them. He loved this town, even in the busy streets with the traffic and the noise and the people, he found a strange sort of peace to it, despite the bustle. It was at least pleasant to him anyway.

‘I love these moments’ Kevin said, ‘where there is nothing to do...nothing expected of me...no deadlines...no responsibility.’

‘Are you worrying about school again?’

‘I just feel so trapped by it all’ Kevin said to her. ‘I mean who wants to learn algebra....? I want to...get a job fulltime...spread my wings....and....’ he fell silent then, bringing his feet up and hugging his knees to his chest. ‘I just love these moments’ he sighed again closing his eyes. ‘It’s so.... peaceful...and I don’t have to think about anything.’

There came a sound of a siren a short distance off, the rumble of a motorbike, someone shouting in the streets.

Kevin opened his eyes, smiling widely to himself, his expression that of serenity.

‘Come on’ he said, straightening and rising to his feet as he took a quick swig from his water bottle. ‘Let’s get going.’

They walked the rest of the way at a leisurely pace, Christina and Kevin talking from time to time, their conversation flowed back and forth smoothly as it always did.

As they drew closer to the apartment block, Christina began to ‘oooh’ and ‘aaahhh’.

‘This is a really nice part of town’ she said gazing about her wide eyed, ‘oooohh look at that fountain! So pretty!’

Kevin ignored her as they walked through the front doors to the building.

‘Awww waw look at this place.’

They stopped before the lift.

‘The music they’re playing is really nice hu?’ she gleamed.

The lift doors opened.

‘This is a tiny lift isn’t it?’

The lift went up.

‘Ooohhh this lift goes up fast...my tummy feels all funny.’

The lift pinged then, coming to a gentle stop.

‘Aaahhh’ Christina sighed, making a funny shape with her mouth. ‘Oooohhh’ she said as they stepped out into the corridor on the highest floor. ‘This place sure is pretty.’

‘Is there anything that doesn’t impress you?’ Kevin asked her flatly at that point.

‘Your hair looks really nice today’ she said to him out of the blue, grinning and looking beautiful.

‘Where did *that* come from...?’

They continued to walk.

‘Ok, it’s this one’ Kevin said stopping by one of the doors.

‘Ooohhh’ Christina said as Kevin struggled with his key, holding the box he carried now with one arm.

Kevin unlocked the door, letting it swing open.

Christina let out a gasp, bolting forwards into the room uninvited and gazing wide-eyed all around.

‘Holy crap this place is huge! It’s like a mansion!’

She turned to Kevin then.

‘*You live here?*’

‘Well yeah I got a key...’

‘I didn’t say you could invite anyone over.’

Kevin and Christina glanced around then, looking up to the figure of Justin who had appeared on the balcony above them.

Upon sight of him, Christina's eyes widened further, and she let out another gasp.

'Is that Justin Miles?! *Thee* Justin Miles?' she gasped yet again. 'Holy shit dude. Kevin.... you never told me you were staying with a superstar!'

'Oh' Kevin replied innocently. 'Did I not mention it?' he asked, knowing that he hadn't.

'No you didn't' Christina replied sternly.

'I don't want you inviting people over' Justin said to Kevin in a firm voice.

'It's not like that' Kevin smiled a little nervously. 'Christina was just helping me bring my stuff over' he said, putting his own box down and taking the one Christina carried from her.

'Isn't that right Christina?'

'What?' she fumbled, as he put the box he took from her on the floor beside their feet.

'She was just leaving now...weren't you Christina?'

'Hu? Hold on a sec...'

'Wait' Justin spoke up, coming down the stairs. 'She must tell no one I live here' he spoke to Kevin, 'your contract depends on it.'

'Oh, don't worry' Kevin said, continuing to usher Christina to the door, 'she is trustworthy.'

'She better be' Justin replied flatly.

Kevin stopped on the threshold of the front door, smiling at Christina who looked dejected.

'So sorry' he smiled apologetically, 'must obey the rules you know...'

'Yeah I know...' she grumbled.

'Promise you will keep this a secret' Kevin whispered to her, putting a finger to his lips and winking at her.

'Sure.'

'Promise?'

She straightened slightly then.

'I swear on my heart and soul I will tell no one.' She relaxed again, smiling to him. 'I wouldn't do that to you.'

'I know you wouldn't' he smiled in return. 'I'll talk to you later ok?'

She let out a disappointed sigh, stepping back away from the door.

'Ok.'

'Do you want money for a bus or something?' Kevin offered her.

'Nah I'm good thanks' she waved away at him, back to her merry self again. 'It's a nice day and all.' She moved away. 'I *do* want to talk to you later though' she said.

'No problem.'

'Bye then Kevin' she gleamed, before turning and striding away down the corridor, back towards the lifts.

She glanced at him with a teasing smile, just one last time as she walked away, before Kevin closed the door.

He sighed heavily, turning back to Justin who had appeared behind him.

'I do mean what I say' Justin told him. 'I don't want people knowing I'm here.'

'Don't worry' Kevin spoke confidently. 'She's one of my best friends...I trust her with my life. She won't tell anyone about you.'

Justin bowed his head, turning and walking away towards the kitchen, seemingly satisfied.

‘Do you want something to eat?’ Justin asked, opening the fridge and staring into it.  
‘No thanks’ Kevin replied. ‘I got a sandwich. I think I’m just going to hang out in my room.’  
Justin continued to stare into the fridge as Kevin carried one of the boxes to his room, then came back for the other.  
He glanced back towards Justin just as he was closing the door, shutting himself in his room.  
He let out a sigh, standing there for a few moments and simply taking in the room around him.  
It was large and very bright; the floor to ceiling windows let all the light flood in.  
Kevin moved over to window, staring down at the area before the building, the large open space with a fountain in the centre.  
It was so pretty here, so peaceful.  
Kevin reached for the string, pulling the curtains shut and throwing the room into darkness.  
He moved over towards the bed, falling back against it and letting out a deep sigh.  
Today had been tiring, though he hadn’t done that much, he felt suddenly drained, as he realised that for the first time in his life, he was living alone.  
Well.... almost...kind of....  
Kevin pushed himself up onto his elbows then, staring at the closed door of his room. On the other side Justin was probably still in the kitchen, cooking or doing whatever he was doing.  
*I wonder what it will be like living with him* Kevin thought to himself. *I wonder...*  
His mobile went off in his pocket then, and Kevin took his shoes off quickly, shuffling up the bed before taking his mobile out.  
It was a text from Christiana

Heya baby! Howya doing?

Kevin text back with a frown upon his face

Dammit woman I just got here, give me some peace

The reply came quickly

Nope! ^^

Kevin smiled to himself and messaged back.

So what are you up to now??

They messaged each other back and forth for a while, and as Kevin lay back on the bed he began to feel tired.

I'm tired, I'm going to sleep now. see you in school tomorrow

Kevin ignored the reply as he dropped the mobile by his side, closing his eyes and yawning widely.

He groaned, resting his head back against the headboard and becoming still.

He was asleep in minutes.

## Chapter Two

### That's Him

Kevin opened his eyes. He was lying on his side now, his mind felt foggy, and his eyes heavy.

He groaned, hand going to his head as he rubbed his eyes, he had the feeling he had been sleeping deeply for a long time.

Kevin sat up, turning his mobile on.

He had a heart attack when he saw what time it was, leaping out of bed and rummaging through his boxes for fresh clothes.

In the kitchen, Justin was making breakfast by the time Kevin rushed out of his room.

'Morning' Justin said as Kevin dashed past him. 'Shouldn't you be in school by-?'

'Can't talk sorry!' Kevin called back as he ran to the door. 'I'm late talk later!'

The door slammed as he rushed out, and Justin stared after him.

He looked back to his plate, continuing to eat his eggs and toast delicately.

Kevin jogged out of the building and through the town, heading towards the bus stop.

He stood at the bus stop panting. Kevin glanced at his watch, before looking up and down the street.

He turned and ran down the street, realising the bus he was supposed to have been on was gone. The next would not come for ages.

Kevin made his way through the streets at a jog, heading to his school.

He arrived only just in time, with only a minute or two before his first class. He let out a sigh of relief, taking his first step forwards into the school, heart pounding in his chest and skin flecked with sweat from his excursion.

He paused then, seeing a short distance away, a young girl sitting on a bench beneath a tree with her head in her hands. She was crying.

Kevin stood frozen where he was, staring at her, hesitant for a moment.

He looked ahead again towards the main building, where his class was to take place, before looking back at the girl. She looked to be about his age.

Kevin stepped off the path, moving over towards her.

The girl looked up with red eyes as Kevin approached; tears were streaming down her cheeks.

Kevin stopped before her, smiling warmly.

They began to talk.

Kevin arrived to class late.

He was told off by the teacher who lectured him about his attendance. Kevin had never really been good at school, a lot of the time he didn't even turn up at all, he barely listened in class and he had flunked most of his exams. His heart just wasn't in it, or at least that's what he had told people when questioned.

His parents had told him numerous times that school and exams were important, but after a time, they have given up telling him.

He didn't know what he wanted from life, once upon a time he had everything planned out. But things were not meant to be.

Kevin returned to class, and the rest of that day went normal as it normally did, in a very repetitive and normal way.

Christina passed him briefly between classes as he made his way.

'Oh, hey Kevin.'

'Hey' he said with a smile, slowing to a stop.

'How are you?'

'I can't really talk...' Kevin replied.

'I know you're going to your next class. I just wanted to ask how your first night in your new place was.'

'It was really nice' Kevin smiled. 'So nice in fact I overslept. I must have been more tired than I realised.'

She smiled warmly at him, eyes shining bright.

'I'll see you around' she said, waving at him.

'Yeah' Kevin replied, standing there with his hands in his pockets. 'Bye.'

He went to class, and then in break hung out with his male friends, Pete and Jonathan and Garry. They talked and joked as they usually did, making arrangements to meet up in a few days after school when they were all free.

Break ended, he went back to class for a few more hours, then freedom.

Kevin was just wandering out of the school gates, walking alone, when a figure jogged up to him.

‘Hey Kevin.’

Kevin turned to see who it was.

‘Oh Anastasia, hey.’

Anastasia smiled widely.

‘Do you mind if I walk home with you?’

‘No problem.’

Kevin suddenly realised, that not everyone knew he had moved. He didn’t want to make a big deal of it, and he thought that taking her to the block of apartments in the fancy part of town he now lived at would raise some questions.

‘Actually, on second thought’ he mentioned trying to sound casual. ‘How about I walk *you* home? It’s that what a gentleman should do?’

Anastasia suddenly gasped with excitement, bringing her hand together.

‘Ooh I’m so happy’ she squealed, moving to stand beside him and smiling. ‘Do you mind if I hold onto your arm?’

‘Go ahead’ Kevin smiled offering his arm to her in a gentlemanly fashion. ‘If it makes you happy.’

They walked together.

Anastasia was a girl of seventeen, three years younger than Kevin. She was slender, a little skinny some might say, but she was beautiful. With thick dark hair in pigtails, makeup tastefully done, she didn’t wear too much. Her eyes were large and her lips were full. She did everything she could every day to make herself look her best, she painted her nails, wore jewellery, but always within the limits of what the school would allow, but only just.

‘This is really nice’ she said after a time as they walked through the streets.

‘Yeah’ Kevin smiled. ‘The weather is gorgeous isn’t it?’

‘Hmm.’

Anastasia frowned a little.

‘Which way to your house?’ Kevin asked as they reached a junction.

‘This way’ Anastasia smiled. ‘It’s just down here.’

They crossed the road, walking for a few minutes in comfortable silence. Kevin was utterly relaxed, and Anastasia, though she couldn’t help herself, kept stealing glances towards him when she thought he wouldn’t notice.

‘Nice neighbourhood this’ Kevin noted.

‘You think so?’ Anastasia said excitedly.

‘Sure’ Kevin replied glancing around. ‘It’s pretty.’

Anastasia giggled then, letting go of his arm suddenly and twirling playfully.

‘Well...this is my house...’

‘Oh cool.’

‘If you don’t mind...maybe you can walk me home again tomorrow.’

‘Sure.’

Anastasia’s expression lit up suddenly, and she balled her fists to her chest with excitement.

‘Ok, well I look forward to it’ she said backing away and smiling as she moved towards her door. ‘Bye Kevin!’

‘Bye.’

She opened her front door, Kevin waiting before her house as he watched her.

She grinned at him widely one last time, hesitating on the threshold only for a moment, before closing the door.

Kevin turned away.

‘You shouldn’t do that’ came a voice.

Kevin glanced around.

‘Oh, Christina. What are you doing here?’

‘It’s ok I won’t let her see me’ Christina replied, lingering on the other side of the wall, hidden from view of the house Anastasia had just entered.

‘You want me to walk you home too?’

‘Don’t be silly’ Christina waved away at him, moving to keep pace with Kevin as he walked by, heading home, the apartment he shared with the stranger Justin. ‘I’m just thinking that you’re giving that girl the wrong impression...I mean if you’re really interested in her.’

‘I’m not.....’

‘You mean you don’t like her?’

‘Well not like that.’

‘Do you like me?’ Christina teased.

‘Not like that...’

She giggled.

‘You’ll always be a great friend to me Christina’ Kevin told her. ‘It’s just I can’t feel anything for anyone anymore, not in a romantic way. Not since that day.’

Christina continued talking in a casual manner, as if Kevin hadn’t just spoken.

‘So, what is it about Anastasia that you don’t like.... *like that...*’ she added with a grin.

‘Weeeell...’ Kevin thought. ‘She’s a lovely girl...I bet she cooks really nice and all but...’

‘But...?’

‘She wants to form roots’ Kevin said. ‘She wants a house and kids and stuff...and...I just don’t want to get tied down.’

‘Oh I see’ Christina smiled, facing ahead.

‘I want to see the world, and travel like my parents do.’

‘They’re travel agents, aren’t they?’

‘Yeah...’ Kevin said turning to her as they walked. ‘They go all sorts of places and see all sorts of amazing things. My father can speak five languages’ he added. ‘Isn’t that impressive?’

‘Oh yes, that’s very impressive’ Christina grinned at him. ‘It’s all very nice’ she added briskly, beginning to kick her feet playfully, holding her hands behind her back. ‘Do you want to come over mine?’ she asked him suddenly.

‘Not today’ he smiled. ‘I just want to get home and relax.’

‘I could help you relax...’ Christina prompted.

‘Maybe another time.’

She huffed moodily.

‘Fine. I’m leaving. See you later!’ she called running away.

She was gone before Kevin had a chance to respond.

He didn't slow in his footsteps, but continued walking, heading the considerable distance back to his new home, having forgotten money for the bus in his rush to get to school that morning, having woken late.

He walked home, enjoying the sunlight, enjoying every step of the way.

Kevin went up in the lift, getting off on the top floor. He was beginning to slowly familiarize himself with the place, though it still felt strange to him.

Kevin stopped before the front door to the apartment and opened the door with his key. He stepped in.

Inside the apartment he found Justin sitting at the table, the table laden with food enough for three people.

'Oh hey' Justin said as Kevin closed the door behind him.

'Hey.'

Kevin put his bag down beside the door, walking over towards the kitchen in the open apartment.

'Are you hungry?' Justin asked him. 'Just help yourself.'

'This is a lot of food' Kevin said staring down at the table. 'Is this just for you?'

'No.'

'This is really nice' Kevin said as he looked down at the food. It was salmon with potatoes and tons of vegetables. 'Who made all this? Did you?'

'Of course not' Justin scoffed, reaching out for his glass, a very expensive, very fancy glass of red wine. 'Mmm' Justin said as he took in the smell of the wine before sipping it. 'So good.' He looked back up at Kevin. 'I have a house-keeper' he explained. 'She comes by daily and does work for me. she cleans the place and she cooks...' Justin looked down at his plate. 'She is very handy to have around.'

'How come I haven't seen her?' Kevin asked.

'She comes usually around midday and leaves before you finish school' Justin replied. 'Sometimes she stays overnight, she lives far away so it's difficult for her to travel sometimes.'

'Oh right.'

'So, have something eat.'

Kevin sat at the table awkwardly, feeling a little uncomfortable as Justin watched him. He helped himself to a spare plate sitting in the middle of the table, and some cutlery, and began to dish himself some food.

'It all smells so good.'

'Alicia is an incredible cook' Justin said. 'I am lucky to have her.'

'Alicia?'

'Yeah' Justin said. 'Do you drink?'

'Sometimes.'

Justin offered Kevin a glass.

'I'd better not' Kevin waved away. 'I have school tomorrow.'

'Suit yourself.'

Kevin began to eat quietly, glancing up occasionally towards Justin, merely out of curiosity. Justin seemed to watch him with the same interest, yet made far less effort to be discrete about it. He just stared.

Kevin was glad to get away from the table after that, retreating to his room and closing the door.

He let out a sigh, turning to face the room. He made his way forwards, beginning to get undressed. He paused for a moment in thought, hand still on his shirt, half over his head.

He took his shirt off, going back out of his room to speak to Justin.

‘Do you mind if I use your bath?’

Justin looked up from what he was doing, pausing just for a split second at the sight of Kevin without his shirt.

‘It’s just through that door’ he pointed, continuing to clear the table away.

‘Ok thanks.’

The bathroom was beautiful and large and of a modern design. Everything was spotlessly clean, and there was an assortment of soaps on the shelves and fresh clean towels on the rail.

Kevin stood for a moment admiring the room, before turning and sliding the bolt across the door, and continuing to undress.

He slipped into the bath when he had run the water, leaning back and sighing deeply, closing his eyes.

The warm water felt so good.

Kevin, by the time he left the bathroom, found the apartment empty. Justin was nowhere to be seen, and the kitchen had been tidied, and was once again spotless with everything in its place.

It was getting dark outside, and inside the apartment, the lights were dimmed. Kevin moved quietly through the apartment, looking up towards the head of the stairs where Justin’s bedroom was.

*Perhaps he is asleep* Kevin thought briefly, pausing in the middle of the apartment to stare up the stairs to the balcony above. *I really am lucky to have found this place* Kevin thought. *It still feels too good to be true...*

He returned to his own room, and went to bed, texting a few of his friends on his mobile before falling asleep.

Kevin rested peacefully, feeling happy.

He woke the next morning in better time, and this time was able to join Justin for breakfast.

‘You seem to be in a good mood’ Justin noted.

‘Well’ Kevin smiled in return, ‘why wouldn’t I be in a good mood?’

Justin smirked back at him.

‘So, are you settling in?’ Justin asked him. ‘I understand that it must be a bit strange for you here.’

‘Yeah it is a bit’ Kevin smiled, he paused then. ‘I realise how lucky I am to have this opportunity’ he said to Justin. ‘I just wanted to thank you.’

‘No problem’ Justin answered, leaning on his elbow with his chin on his palm. ‘And yes, you are lucky, and don’t you forget it.’

‘I won’t’ Kevin smiled, grabbing the last piece of toast from his plate and heading to the door.

‘I got to go now’ he said putting his coat on.

‘I might not be here when you get back’ Justin told him. ‘I’ll be back later so you can just help yourself to anything you like from the fridge, Alicia will be here after midday to cook.’

‘Ok thanks’ Kevin waved at him before closing the door, ‘bye!’

He went down the lift, leaving the building at a brisk walk and heading towards the bus stop.

He arrived at his school in good time today, meeting the young girl who had been crying the day before. Her name was Jessica. They stood together for a few moments near the gates of the school, looking around them.

And then Jessica shook her head. ‘He’s not here.’

Kevin left her side, each going to their own class and going their own separate ways. Kevin continued his day as usual, met later on by Anastasia.

‘Hi Kevin’ she cooed at him shyly, dipping her head, hands folded before her.

‘Oh hey’ he said turning to her. ‘How are you?’

‘I’m great’ she beamed, hand behind her back now as she began to sway, continuing to smile.

She looked so beautiful. ‘I was wondering if....um...’

‘Yeah?’ Kevin asked her. ‘What is it?’

‘I was wondering if...you wanted to go out to town with me tonight, after school?’

‘I can’t I’m afraid’ Kevin said. ‘I’m hanging out with friends, I’ve already made plans.’

She looked devastated, as if he had just stabbed her in the heart.

‘But we could do it tomorrow night’ he offered quickly. ‘Would that be ok?’

She gasped suddenly in joy, expression quickly lighting up. ‘Oh my god I would *love* that! Could it be like a date?’

He hesitated then, blinking at her.

‘I um.... well sure but....’

‘But what?’ she asked innocently.

‘I don’t know if I’m looking for anything like that right now.’

‘Oh, I see’ she replied. ‘Well that’s ok I guess...I just...I’d like to hang out with you, I mean if that’s alright with you. If you don’t mind.’

‘Sure.’

She squealed in delight, shoulders hunched and fists balled before her.

She twirled then, her skirt flowing around her.

‘I’m so happy’ she cried. ‘I’ll see you tomorrow then.’ She danced away, pausing a short distance away. ‘Shall we meet up outside the school gates tomorrow?’

‘Sure’ he smiled.

‘I look forward to it.’

She danced away, skipping happily.

Kevin watched her go. He turned and continued on his way, heading to the courtyard in the school to meet his friends.

Along the way he came across Christina, sitting upon a wall and laughing. She was alone, and as Kevin passed her by, he realised that she was laughing at *him*.

‘What’s so funny?’ he snapped irritant at her.

‘Did you not see that?’ Christina laughed at him, as he continued to walk past her, not stopping. ‘She’s in love with you’ Christina gleamed. ‘Don’t you see?’

‘Just mind your own business’ Kevin glowered as Christina continued to laugh at him. He walked away, ignoring her.

He met his friends for a time before going back to class and meeting them again when school had finished.

‘Hey mate there are you!’ one of them called out to him. ‘What took you so long?’

‘Sorry’ Kevin mumbled approaching them. ‘I was just talking to a friend.’

‘What’s his name?’ one of his friends asked as he joined the group, turning and walking away.

‘*Her* name is Jessica’ Kevin corrected.

‘A girl?’ one of them teased.

‘A girl?’ another echoed. ‘You’re surrounded by women’ he laughed at Kevin.

‘It’s not like that’ Kevin scowled. ‘There’s this kid picking on her, she was crying the other day and I decided to see what was wrong.’

‘Caring for others as usual’ his friend said. ‘You know that everyone’s problems are not your own.’

‘I know’ Kevin said. ‘But if I can help someone I will.’

‘So, what are you going to do?’

Kevin thought. ‘I’m going to teach him a lesson.’

The others glanced towards him but said nothing as they continued to walk.

‘Come on’ one of them spoke up, ‘let’s go to the park.’

They stayed out late drinking in the park, the cans they had bought from the supermarket. Kevin laughed and joked around with his friends, it took them all a long time each to go home when they eventually parted ways hours later.

Kevin wandered tipsily through the streets, heading back to the apartment.

He went up in the lift, reaching the highest floor and heading to the door at the end of the corridor. It was locked.

He groaned, pulling out his key, dropping it several times on the floor in his drunken state before successfully inserting it into the lock.

He opened the door to find the apartment silent and dark, Justin wasn’t here. The place was empty.

Kevin reached for the light switch, lighting up the apartment. Everything was tidy as usual, Kevin thought that Alicia the house keeper must have visited, but he had missed her again.

Kevin closed the front door, heading to his room. He didn’t even bother to undress, dropping his bag on the floor and falling forwards onto the bed. He was asleep within a few minutes.

He woke the next morning feeling groggy, his mouth dry like sand.

He crawled out of bed reluctantly, having tangled himself up in the sheets. It was still early, and he had plenty of time before school. He got undressed and had a quick shower before having his breakfast. Justin was still not here, Kevin glanced up towards the top of the stairs where Justin's bedroom was, wondering for a moment if Justin was asleep in there. Or maybe he was still out, having not come home at all.

He left for school, the day went normal, and afterwards, he met with Anastasia, but not before meeting with Jessica.

'He's not here' she had said to him, and so Kevin had left her to meet Anastasia.

'Hi Kevin' he beamed, 'it's so great to see you.'

'Hey Anastasia.'

'So, shall we go and grab a coffee or something?'

'I prefer tea' Kevin gleamed.

'Oh, you're so funny' she giggled, before straightening up. 'Can I hold your hand?'

'Sure' he said reaching out to her, confidently and without hesitation. 'This way we won't get lost in the crowd.'

'Ok' she breathed, flushing a little.

Along the way they found a nice coffee shop. They went in, finding a small table by the window and sitting. Kevin ordered and paid for both of them, bringing their drinks to the table.

'Hey' Anastasia spoke suddenly, looking over towards the counter, 'isn't that Christiana?'

Kevin glanced around, seeing Christina working behind the counter, dressed in smart and modest black.

'Yeah' Kevin said turning back to Anastasia calmly. 'She works here.'

'Are you like...together or something?' Anastasia asked Kevin.

'Nah it's nothing like that' Kevin smiled confidently, leaning with his elbows on the table.

'We're just friends...'

'Oh good' Anastasia breathed a sigh of relief. 'I thought...you're together a lot you know...and I thought...?' she looked down at her drink. 'What is she doing here, I thought she had another job in that other place...that restaurant?'

'She has two jobs' Kevin said, 'she has her own place so has to work a lot of hours to earn money...between school it gets quite difficult for her. I help her when I can.'

'That's nice' Anastasia beamed. 'It must be great to have a friend like that.'

They had fun together, Kevin eventually walking her home hours later. She thanked him, telling him she had a wonderful time, before leaving him, but not before giving him a kiss on the cheek.

Kevin watched her go, seeing her through the door, before turning and heading home.

The next morning at school, he met with Jessica again outside the school gates. They stood together looking around, until Jessica spotted him at last.

‘That’s him’ she said.

Kevin turned, seeing the guy.

‘Are you sure?’

‘Yeah’ she said. ‘That’s the guy that’s been making my life hell.’

Kevin turned and headed towards him, walking at a stride, his concentration fixed on the man.

The man turned as Kevin approached him.

### Chapter Three

#### Letter from an old Friend

The man turned just as Kevin approached him, just before Kevin swung a fist, punching him hard right in the face.

The man stumbled back, falling to the ground caught by surprise.

He took a few seconds to register what had happened, turning back to Kevin in anger.

‘You son of a bitch!’

Kevin kicked him again while he was down, not giving him a chance to rise to his feet. He grabbed the man then, turning his face towards Jessica, who was standing there horrified, hands clapped over her mouth.

‘You’ve been making her life hell’ Kevin growled maliciously, speaking directly into his ear, still holding his head, ‘and I’ll make you fucking regret it.’

The man grabbed him suddenly, hands around Kevin’s head, clawing at his face. He rose swiftly, throwing Kevin off him and facing him, his stance rigid and shoulders hunched.

People had stopped to stare at the spectacle, some even drifting closer to get a better look.

‘You’ll fucking pay for that’ the man hissed at Kevin.

‘Bring it on’ Kevin snarled, riled up now. ‘You hurt someone you gotta pay the price.’

The man gritted his teeth, charging towards Kevin without a second pause, barrelling into Kevin.

They began to fight.

People in the distant began to shout, and a crowd began to gather around them, it was only a matter of time before the teachers showed up.

Kevin was thrown to the floor, smacking his face on the ground, the hot sensation of pain instantly erupting from where he had landed. He tasted blood, coughing as he breathed dust from the ground into his lungs.

The man grabbed him again, hauling him to his feet. In one swift move Kevin spun around, punching the man in the side. The man grabbed him, holding Kevin in place. Kevin groaned in pain, straining to free himself from the man’s grasp. Kevin punched the man in the face once, twice, Kevin was suddenly struck across the cheek with the bone of the man’s elbow, striking him hard enough to make Kevin see stars.

The man stumbled forwards suddenly, hit from behind. Kevin glanced up in time to see Christiana attacking the man, her foot shot out as she kicked him hard above the knee with her heeled shoes, before reaching forwards and clawing him across the face. Kevin lunged for him, grabbing him before he had the chance to attack Christiana.

‘You stay away from Jessica’ Kevin hissed into the man’s ear, holding onto him from behind. ‘Make her cry again and I won’t hesitate to find you and hurt you.....’

Someone grabbed Kevin from behind suddenly, pulling him off the man as another teacher grabbed onto the man, holding him back.

Christina slipped from view, disappearing into the now heavy crowd before the teachers had a chance to catch her. She was long gone, and Kevin and the man were dragged to the head teacher’s office, and the crowd slowly dispersed, disappointment heavy in the air.

As Kevin was taken away, he spared one last glance back at Jessica who stood there looking shocked and a little frightened. He smiled at her encouragingly, and she after a few moments, smiled weakly back at him.

Kevin was suspended from school and told to go home that day. He left the school grounds, instead wandering through the town, heading in no particular direction. Eventually he came to a park, sitting in a secluded area upon a bench. He put his bag down on the bench beside him, leaning back with a heavy sigh.

He thought for a moment that he could visit his parents, as he had not seen them in a few days, but decided against it. *They wouldn’t want to see me in this state anyway* Kevin smiled to himself. He touched his own face tentatively, rasping sharply then. It was very tender, his face was bruised and swollen, he had been scratched and cut, and the blood that flecked his face had dried now. *I must look a mess* he thought lowering his hand. *Still...it was worth it.*

He craned his head back, looking up at the clouds. He felt content. In pain, but happy.

*Guess I have a lot of free time now* Kevin realised. *I wonder what I should do...*

He stayed there on the park bench for quite some time, it must have been several hours. He just sat there resting, thinking about all sorts of things, until someone abruptly broke his thoughts.

‘Hey Kevin, I thought I might find you here...’

Kevin gave a start, staring back at Christina a little alarmed.

‘Wow you look rough’ she beamed back as Kevin sat up, rising to his feet hastily.

‘W-what are you doing here?’

‘I came to find you of course’ Christina spoke merrily.

Behind Christina was another figure, it was Jessica.

‘Hey’ Kevin said breathlessly then, speaking to Jessica, ‘are you alright?’

‘I wanted to thank you for what you did’ she said to him a little shy. ‘It was very kind of you to stand up for me like that, although...I didn’t know you would go so far...I thought you were just going to talk to him...’

‘Oh, come on’ Kevin smirked. ‘I had to get the message across. I’m not just going to stand around and do nothing while the strong pick on the weak.’

‘Always an agent of justice’ Christina winked at him, lifting her chin and folding her arms.

Jessica turned away then, scratching her head awkwardly. 'You sound like some sort of hero' she mumbled shyly.

'Do I?' Kevin raised an eyebrow. 'I don't mean to.'

'So, what are you going to do now?' Christina asked him. 'I guess you've probably been suspended from school?'

'For two weeks at least' Kevin sighed.

'Oh no now I feel really bad' Jessica worried.

'Oh no don't worry about me' Kevin said hastily, waving at her with an encouraging smile. 'I knew this was going to happen...I *wanted* this...I swear...'

Jessica remained unconvinced.

'So, I guess you'll have a lot of time on your hands from now on' Christina said. 'Got any plans?'

'Nah...' Kevin replied carelessly. 'Not really.'

'Why don't you go on a date with Anastasia?' Christina suggested sweetly, holding her hands behind her back and resting on her heels, leaning forwards and tilting her head playfully at him.

'Are you trying to hook us up or something?' Kevin frowned at her unimpressed.

'Well why not?' Christina said, 'a handsome guy like you being single? It's a waste.'

'Well gee thanks' Kevin replied flatly.

Jessica glanced from each of them a little nervously, wondering at that moment what was between the two. It was clear that they were very close.

'You could stay with me if you like' Christina offered. 'You know you're always welcome at my place.'

'Thanks' Kevin said in another flat voice, 'but I already got a place.'

'Well it was worth a try' Christina grinned.

'I think I'm going home now' Kevin said, taking his bag and walking away. 'I'll see you two around...'

'Woah, what happened to you?' Justin asked as Kevin came through the door of the apartment.

Kevin closed the door, moving over to the sofa and sitting down heavily on it.

'I fell down the stairs' he replied sarcastically.

Justin closed the magazine he had been reading, putting it down on the low coffee table between them. He leant forward on his knees, staring at Kevin closely.

'God that looks painful...'

'That's because it is.'

'Want some ice? You've still got blood on you by the way.'

'Um...yeah thanks...'

Justin rose, moving over to the kitchen, getting a bag of ice and wrapping it in a clean dishcloth.

Kevin leant on the arm of the sofa, touching his face tenderly as he heard running water from the kitchen sink.

‘Here’ Justin said coming to his side. He offered Kevin the bag of ice, and a damp cloth soaked in warm water.

Kevin took both.

‘Thank you.’

Justin moved away, resuming his place on the sofa and picking up the magazine, but he did not continue to read it.

‘There’s food ready if you’re hungry’ he said.

Kevin glanced around, seeing the table laid out beautifully, the food covered with cling film.

‘There’s always so much food in this place’ Kevin noted, but Justin was not listening, he had continued to read his magazine, and was completely ignoring Kevin now.

‘So uh... when do you go to the shops to buy all this stuff?’ Kevin asked him.

‘Are you kidding? I don’t go out and get this stuff myself, it gets delivered to the door. Do you really see me buying bread and milk in a supermarket?’

Kevin thought then. He had a sudden image in his mind of Justin waiting in line with a shopping trolley, wearing his sunglasses to help hide his face, his hood raised and collar up to avoid attention.

Kevin frowned at the thought.

*Yeah...no...*

‘Must be tough being famous’ Kevin remarked.

‘So you got in a fight then’ Justin said. It wasn’t phrased like a question. ‘Did you win?’

‘I made my point’ Kevin replied flatly, using one hand to hold the bag of ice to his face, and the other to wipe away the dried blood.

‘He really did a number on you.’

‘I really did a number on *him*.’

Justin smiled, amused by his answer.

‘I uh...got suspended.’

‘Oh.’

‘I won’t be in school for a while.’

‘Oh.’ Justin looked down at his magazine again. ‘In that case you might get to meet Alicia at last, the housekeeper?’

‘Oh’ Kevin mumbled. ‘Right...’

‘You’ll have more free time on your hands I’m sure’ Justin mumbled. ‘Just don’t cause any problems for me.’

‘Sure...’ Kevin frowned.

He went to his room shortly after and stayed there for the rest of the night.

He got a text from Anastasia.

I heard what happened...are you ok???

Kevin text back.

I'm fine : ) I look a mess though

The reply came quickly.

Can we meet up tomorrow since your not in school?

\*

Aren't you still in school? And anyway I look hideous! Like a beast.

\*

I dont care I want to see u

Kevin smiled to himself in amusement.

That's nice but I'm not looking for anything right now, you know that

\*

I don't care, I just love being with you. Even if you only thnk of me as a friend xxx maybe you will change your mind.

Kevin messaged back.

Ok, meet you at 10am in the park?

She agreed with much enthusiasm, and Kevin said goodbye to her, lying back on his bed. It was still early, so he spent the rest of that day lazing about the apartment. He played some games on his phone, before going to the living room to watch some TV, sometime later Justin joined him for dinner. They ate together and he went away again, to attend to whatever business he had. Kevin had a long and relaxing bath after that, before watching more TV for several hours as it grew late, then going to bed.

Justin was still out and would not return until much later.  
Kevin however, slept heavily, and nothing woke him. His dreams were peaceful.

The next day Kevin met with Anastasia at the time and place they agreed. Anastasia looked absolutely beautiful, even more beautiful than she usually did, it was clear she made an effort. It was a warm day and she wore a gorgeous yellow dress that fit her slender figure perfectly, leaving her shoulders and arms bare. She wore comfortable flat shoes that left her toes bare, the straps winding around her ankle, and she carried a little yellow bag with a flower on the front to match her dress. Her hair as usual in pigtails looked stunning.

‘You look nice’ he said to her as she skipped up to him.

‘Oh, thank you’ she said flustered. ‘I hope I didn’t keep you waiting.’

‘Nah’ he waved her away, ‘I’ve only been here a few minutes.’

‘Sorry about that’ she said bashfully.

‘It’s cool.’ He paused then. ‘Are you sure it’s ok for you to miss school like this?’

‘I called in sick, I’ve got good attendance so no one will suspect a thing.’

‘What about your parents?’

‘They’re both at work, they won’t be back for *hours*.’

‘Well what if someone sees you and recognises you?’

‘It’s fun to break the rules once in a while don’t you think?’ she winked at him.

He frowned at her. ‘Alright then.’ He extended his arm out for her to take. ‘Where should we head to first?’

‘Well I haven’t had breakfast’ she answered blushing slightly as she took his arm.

‘Why don’t we go and get something to eat then?’ Kevin suggested immediately.

‘Oh...alright’ Anastasia breathed. She screamed internally with pure joy, before controlling herself and walking alongside Kevin, holding onto his arm firmly and sticking close to him. They walked away together in a comfortable silence, Anastasia glancing towards Kevin occasionally as they went, Kevin completely at ease walked looking ahead.

‘It’s not good to skip your breakfast you know’ he said to her suddenly. ‘They say that breakfast is the most important meal of the day.’

‘But I’m not skipping my breakfast’ she said to him with a smile, leaning forward to see his face clearer as they walked. ‘I’m sharing breakfast with you’ she sighed.

Kevin glanced towards her, feeling his stomach tighten a little, and his heart lift.

‘Listen um...I’m glad I came out with you and all but...’

‘I know’ she interrupted, ‘you’re not looking for anything right now.’

‘I’m glad you understand’ he sighed with relief, scratching the back of his head awkwardly and grinning. ‘I just don’t want to get tied down that’s all...but I...do like you.’

She couldn’t hold back the gasp of joy at these words, her eyes shining brightly.

‘Please don’t get the wrong idea’ he added hastily, ‘I just...like hanging out with you...that’s all...you’re good company.’

‘I’m so glad you think so’ she answered, barely able to keep in her excitement. ‘I like being with you too.’

They shared a very enjoyable meal together, their conversation flowed backwards and forwards very smoothly. Being together felt natural to them, though Kevin made his feelings clear several times, this did not faze Anastasia.

When they had finished eating, they had a coffee and a tea, and before they left, Kevin insisted on paying.

They wandered the town together for hours, before Anastasia said she had to return home.

‘My parents will be home soon’ she told Kevin reluctantly. ‘Just to be safe.... I should be home when they get back.’

‘I understand.’

They were in the park now, in a secluded patch surrounded by trees and a little way off the path. It was cooler here in the shade, Anastasia had insisted they come this way.

She dipped her head then, suddenly a little nervous.

‘I um...had a lot of fun with you today.’

‘Yeah me too’ Kevin replied totally calm and casual.

‘I’d be happy if we could do it again.’

‘Me too’ Kevin repeated, doing so with a smile.

A silence passed between them, a silence in which Anastasia stared at the floor, Kevin watching her calmly, standing there with his hands in his pockets.

‘Can I kiss you?’ she asked suddenly, forcing the words from her mouth.

‘I’ve told you how I feel’ he replied.

She pursed her lips, the edges of her eyes crinkling nervously.

‘I just...um...’

‘I don’t mind’ Kevin said reaching out to her and caressing her cheek, ‘...if that’s what you want...’

She glanced up in surprise, eyes wide.

He kissed her tenderly then, hand slipping around to cradle the back of her head.

Anastasia blinked then, a little tense at first, then began to relax as she kissed him back.

He stepped towards her, not breaking away from their kiss, as he pushed her back firmly against the tree behind, opening his mouth wider and slipping his tongue into her mouth.

She let out a moan, unable to stop herself. His hand moved down her body, grasping her around the wrist and tightening, as he pressed his body against hers.

He broke off suddenly, leaving Anastasia breathless and flustered.

Kevin already had a lot of experience in pleasuring a woman, though he had only had one serious relationship, he had learned much in a short space of time.

‘I’ll see you around’ he spoke with a smile in a raspy, seductive voice, before turning and simply walking away, leaving Anastasia still leaning back against the tree, completely lost for words and cheeks red.

Kevin couldn’t help smiling to himself and feeling a little smug, amused by her reaction, he felt very pleased with himself as he walked, heading in no particular direction.

After a time, he slowly began to make his way home, meandering this way and that through the town.

It was still bright outside, though the day was coming to an end.

He reached the apartment to see at first that it appeared empty. Feeling a little tired, he lay back on the sofa, letting out a sigh and closing his eyes.

He lay there for what must have been about ten minutes or so, before he was woken by a sound.

Kevin opened his eyes, seeing a figure leaning over him.

He gave a cry of alarm, sitting bolt upright and glancing around at the figure.

‘Hey there!’ she said.

Kevin stared back at the person that had spoken to him. It was a woman. She looked to be about twenty-five in age and was very pretty, with long corn-coloured hair, blue eyes, and a high-necked modest yellow dress with a long skirt. Her figure was slender and curvy, though she stood straight as if wearing a corset around her waist.

‘It’s nice to meet you at last’ the woman said, smiling at Kevin as he slowly straightened up, turning to face her as he rose from the sofa he had been resting on.

Kevin stared intently at the woman.

‘... Alicia?’

She squealed in delight then, clapping her hands together. ‘You know me?!’

‘Um...Justin did mention you once or twice before.’

‘He did?’ Alicia moved closer, her face inches away from Kevin’s now, making him very tense. ‘What else did he say?’ she asked him in a seductive voice.

‘T-that was all’ Kevin fumbled. ‘He only mentioned you briefly...said that you were the housekeeper?’

‘Hmm?’ she cocked her head. ‘Is that all he said?’

The front door opened then, and they both turned to see Justin enter the apartment.

‘Baby!’

Alicia moved away from Kevin immediately, dancing over to Justin and throwing herself into his arms.

‘Oh’ Kevin said as he saw the two together then, Alicia hanging off Justin who looked a little irritated, wearing a stoic expression. ‘So, you two are like...together?’

‘We are not a couple’ Justin snapped.

‘Oh’ Kevin said, glancing away awkwardly then. ‘I see...’

‘Do you?’

Kevin glanced back at Justin uncertainly. He watched them closely for a brief moment, just a few seconds.

‘Kevin’ Justin spoke seriously as Alicia let go of him, standing calmly by his side facing Kevin, ‘could you go out for a few hours?’

‘Um...sure’ Kevin replied as the cogs turned in his head, ‘no problem.’

He grabbed his mobile and some cash from his room quickly before heading for the door.

‘Take your time’ Justin spoke slowly as he saw him out.

Kevin paused briefly, glancing back and seeing Alicia and Justin standing side by side. Justin was expressionless; Alicia on the other hand looked excited, her eyes flashing with a wild hunger.

Kevin turned away, grimacing a little, before making his way down the corridor quickly towards the elevator, hearing the door closed behind him.

He thought then of visiting Christina, who wasn’t in school today, but working. She had finished early this day he knew, and so he went to see her, just for something to do.

‘Ooooh that’s so naughty’ Christina gleamed excitedly, as Kevin recounted the past events to her. ‘And you thought she was *just* a house keeper. What fun!’

They were in her apartment now, a modest place, yet comfortable enough, though it was small and a little dark. It was the best she could afford on her own.

Christina had finished work early today, and so he met her here.

‘Yeah’ Kevin scoffed. ‘I wasn’t expecting *that*.’

‘What’s she like then?’ Christina asked, stretching out cat-like on the sofa and putting her legs across Kevin’s lap.

‘She’s....’ Kevin thought, frowning a bit with annoyance at Christina, ‘...childish.’ Kevin finished. ‘Seems nice enough...I only met her briefly just once and spoke only a few words to her. She seems...like an excited school girl.’

‘Oh, I like the sound of her already’ Christina smirked, looking down at him.

She began to stroke her barefoot up Kevin’s chest.

‘What to have some fun?’ she asked him.

‘Maybe another time’ he replied.

‘Aaaawww?’

‘Sorry.’

She got off him suddenly, pouting as she shuffled away from him on the sofa, sitting as far away from him as she could.

‘Want to watch some TV or have something to eat?’ she offered sulkily.

‘Can I just have tea?’

Christina snuggled up to Kevin as they watched terrible TV together, Kevin mostly ignoring Christina’s affection.

Several hours later he decided to go home, giving Christina a hug on her doorstep.

‘Thanks for coming to see me’ she said to him. ‘You know I love having you around.’

‘Thanks’ Kevin smirked happily, ‘I love being around.’

Christina stepped back from him, letting go and smiling as she gazed into his eyes.

‘Bye then’ she said, touching his cheek briefly before drawing her hand back. ‘See you another time?’

‘Yeah’ Kevin said turning away, ‘see you around.’

Kevin returned to the apartment tentatively, Justin and Alicia were downstairs now, and everything seemed normal at first. But as Kevin sat down at the table, he looked at Alicia closely, noticing her state.

She looked exhausted suddenly, like she hadn't slept in days, and was suddenly lethargic, eyes half-open. And as Kevin looked down, he saw red marks around her wrists.

He felt a jolt in his heart then as he suddenly realised, glancing briefly towards Justin who was his usual self, looking down at his plate as he helped himself to more food.

Nothing in Justin had changed.

The three of them ate their meal in silence. The food was delicious as usual.

Once they were finished, Alicia and Justin cleared away the table.

'Would you like some help?' Kevin offered.

'No' Justin said quickly, 'could you just...go to your room for a few hours.'

'Are you serious?' Kevin couldn't stop himself from asking.

Justin just stared at him, unmoved.

'Uh...' Kevin said, when the silence began to get uncomfortable. 'Sure. No problem.'

'And wear headphones' Justin added as Kevin walked away.

Kevin paused, glancing back at Justin to see if he was joking. But he looked deadly serious.

Kevin faced ahead again, walking with determination towards his room and closing the door behind him.

He did what he was told, lying on bed hours later listening to music through his headphones.

The music was loud.

The next morning, he woke early, visiting Christina before she went to school.

'You want some make up?' she repeated, staring at him as he stood before her in the doorway of her apartment.

'Uh, yeah, can I come in?'

He pushed past her suddenly into the room, Christina closed the door after him, turning to him.

'What do you want make up for?'

'It's not like that' Kevin frowned.

His hand went to his face then, where there was still heavy bruising from the fight.

'I want to go and visit my parents' Kevin explained. 'And I don't want to look like this.'

'Oh, I see' Christina spoke softly. 'I thought you were going strange on me.'

She handed him what he needed, and he began to paint around his eye and cheeks as Christina bustled around the apartment, a little flustered.

'God I'm always so busy' she complained bitterly, 'I never have enough time...'

'How does it look?' she asked Kevin hurriedly then.

Kevin straightened up, lowering his hand. He turned away from the mirror to face Christina, smiling at her.

'What do you think?' he smiled, 'looks gone hu?'

‘It looks pretty convincing’ she sighed wearily. ‘Now are you done? I have to go out now.’

He walked with Christina to school, just because he wanted, and it was a nice day.

‘I’ll see you around then’ Christina sighed wearily when they had reached the school gates.

‘Hey’ he said grabbing her arm firmly then to stop her, she turned back to him. ‘Take it easy ok?’

She let out a sigh, her eyes tired.

‘I will’ he smiled wearily. ‘Thanks.’

He let go of her then.

‘I’ll see you’ Kevin said to her.

‘Bye.’

She turned and marched away, Kevin watched her as she went. From where he stood he saw Jessica. She raised her hand to wave at him tentatively. He waved back at her, jovially. She felt guilty for what had happened, blaming herself for Kevin’s suspension, he knew this, and yet he regretted nothing.

He turned away from her then, walking away from the school with a spring in her step.

He headed home, back to see his parents, and feeling a little nervous.

They were delighted to see him and welcomed him with open arms. His mother hugged him tightly on the doorstep, Kevin hugging her back with amusement, laughing and complaining after a few moments that he couldn’t breathe.

‘I’m sorry’ his mother said flustered as she let go of him. Patting him down, ‘it’s just so good to see you, why didn’t you come and see us sooner?’

‘I’m sorry’ Kevin gasped with a smile. ‘I...I’ve just been busy, so much has been going on you know?’

‘Come, come on in’ his mother ushered him in the door, unable to keep her hands off him, acting excited like a child on Christmas. ‘Honey! We have a visitor, come quick!’

His father rounded the corner, appearing from the kitchen. Kevin braced himself for another tight hug, fighting for breath as his father held him tightly.

‘Let’s get you some tea, shall we?’ his mother offered, forcefully pulling the two apart before his father had a chance to suffocate him. ‘Honey?’ she said to Kevin, placing her hand upon his shoulder. ‘Would you like some tea?’

‘Yes please’ he smiled.

She grasped him either side of his cheeks, nuzzling his nose with her own.

‘We’ve both missed you so much’ his mother said to him, forcing herself to let go of him before moving away. ‘Come on, hurry up and sit down.’

They all moved into the kitchen, his mother bustling around the kitchen, humming happily to herself as Kevin and his father sat at the table.

‘How are things for you then?’ his father asked him. ‘Is your new place nice? What about the man you're staying with?’

‘It’s all really nice’ Kevin smiled back at his father. ‘The guy I'm staying with is nice enough, and the place is amazing.’

‘We would love to see it’ his mother said, and Kevin felt a nervous twinge in his stomach, ‘but I doubt the man who owns it would want strangers wandering around his home’ his mother finished, and Kevin relaxed slightly.

‘We have some news for you’ his father told him. ‘We are.....selling the house.’

‘Selling the house?’ Kevin said a little alarmed. ‘Why?’

‘We’ve been here for so long’ his mother said, pausing what she was doing and turning to face him. ‘This was only supposed to be a temporary house, you were.... not exactly planned’ his mother gleamed at him shyly, ‘a happy surprised but...unexpected. We never expected to adopt but....it just happened. One thing led to another, and it was the best thing I ever did.’ She giggled then like a child. ‘You’ve never really like this house that much’ his mother said, ‘have you...?’

‘I never said that?’ Kevin protested.

‘It’s alright’ his mother replied, placing teacups before each of them. ‘We understand. You were never happy with staying in one place for too long, even as a boy.’

Kevin watched tentatively as his mother poured his tea, adding the milk.

‘Our business is doing very well’ his father explained, ‘and I think it’s time to move away from here, for work, you understand? Plus, we want to see as much of the world as we can before we die.’

‘Honey!’ his mother scolded. ‘Don’t talk like that, we’re not planning on dying, not anytime soon anyway.’ She turned to Kevin then. ‘But he’s right about us wanting to see the world. We never wanted to stay here for this long.’

‘When....’ Kevin gasped, trying to control himself, ‘...when are you leaving?’

‘Not for a few weeks.’

‘A few weeks?!’

‘We will always stay in touch’ his mother said kissing him on the forehead. ‘We are moving to another country to continue our business together.’

‘Tour guide’ Kevin mumbled. ‘That’s going well then?’

‘Oh, exceedingly well’ his mother gleamed, ‘but we need to be closer to our friends in order to run our business better.’

‘Oh...’ Kevin mumbled. ‘I see.’

‘Are you alright?’ his mother asked.

‘Oh...uh yeah it’s just...’ he swallowed the lump in his throat. ‘I'm going to miss you...’

His parents smiled at him.

‘Oh’ his father spoke, reaching around to grab a letter from the kitchen counter. ‘This came for you the other day.’

He handed the letter to Kevin, who took it uncertainly, opening it.

‘This is from Lisa’ he gasped, glancing up at his parents.

‘We know’ his mother smiled. ‘We recognise the handwriting.’

‘And she drew a starfish on the envelope’ his father pointed out. ‘You remember how much she always loved starfish?’

Kevin glanced at the envelope again, seeing a little cartoon sketch of a starfish.

‘She could be a little odd sometimes’ his father said to no one in particular, ‘but she was a good girl.’

‘She was perfect’ Kevin breathed, opening the letter.

Lisa was a childhood sweetheart, for many years the two had played together and become very close friends. One day her family moved away, her father needing to do so due to work reasons, and Kevin had not seen her for a very long time. It was a devastating blow to have lost her, they had kept in touch for years after, but had not seen each other since they were children. And then, Kevin had met Sarah.

Kevin began feverishly reading the letter, his heart beating hard in his chest, and butterflies in his stomach. He gripped the letter tightly, hands trembling slightly in excitement and anticipation.

Hello Kevin, I know it's been a while so I thought I'd write to you.

I hope you are well, you probably already know (or maybe you don't) but I have missed you over the years, and have thought a lot about you, I wonder at times if you think about me? I have wanted to see you again for a long time, and finally I can. I have a surprise for you, though I know it's been a while, but I'm coming to see you, isn't that great? We can catch up on all the stuff we've been doing these last few years, getting letters from you is nice, though I know you're not very good at writing. It's not the same as meeting you in person. I want to hear your voice, and see you smile. I have missed you so much.

Dad is moving to your town for a few days for work and I managed to convince him to let me come. He's renting an apartment with two rooms so it's perfect, he should be there by now but I'm following a little after. I have a busy time at school right now, but am coming to you as soon as I can, I should be there by next weekend. Will you meet me at the train station? It's been a while since I've been to your town, and I don't know if I can remember where everything is. Perhaps you can show me again. We could just hang out like we did in the old days. Wouldn't that be nice? It'll be just like it was before. I look forward to it. Please meet me there, I should be arriving at around midday. Until then, please look after yourself.

Lots of love

Lisa

Kevin looked up from the letter to see his parents watching him expectantly.

‘Well?’ his mother urged. ‘What did she say?’

‘She’s coming here next weekend’ Kevin breathed. ‘She...her dad is staying here for a few days for work, and she’s coming.’

‘Oh, that’s wonderful’ his mother gleamed as Kevin put the page down, folding it back neatly into its envelope. ‘It’ll be nice to see her again.’

‘Yeah’ Kevin mumbled, blushing slightly and averting his eyes, ‘it will...’

Kevin stayed for a long while, talking about everything and nothing with his parents, they gave him tea, fed him, gave him more tea, and by the time Kevin left he felt he had consumed way too.

He smiled to himself as he headed back to his own place, feeling a strong love for both his parents. They were of course not his own, both his blood parents had died when he was a baby, he had never known them. But his adopted parents had always been kind to him, they were all he ever knew. Sometimes it was easy to forget they weren’t related, and he didn’t want to be a burden on them, that’s why he had moved on.

Kevin came to the base of the large building, glancing about at the beautiful surroundings before entering. He went up in the lift to the top floor, waiting quietly as the lift made its ascent before slowing to a gentle stop. When he came out of the lift, he saw a woman standing before the door to the apartment he was staying, the woman was knocking hard on the door, her movements jittery and irate as if she had been standing there for a while.

‘Is everything alright?’ Kevin asked.

The woman turned to him, seeming surprised to see him there. She must not have heard the lift arrive.

‘Oh, I’m sorry’ she said turning towards him with a smile, ‘I was just trying to reach the owner of this apartment.’

‘You mean Justin?’ Kevin offered.

‘You know him?’ the woman asked.

‘I live here with him’ Kevin explained, ‘I’m just a tenant, he rents out a room to me.’

‘Oh, is that so’ the woman frowned, clearly displeased. ‘He must really be short on money in that case. Has he done anything inappropriate to you?’

Kevin hesitated at the strange question.

‘Like what?’

'I guess that's a no' the woman finished. 'No one is answering the door' she said opening the folder she was carrying and pulling out an A4 envelope. 'Could you hand this to him? Work stuff.'

'Ok course' Kevin replied taking the envelope, 'are you his college?'

'I'm his agent, Amanda' she said.

'Nice to meet you' Kevin answered politely.

'Likewise,' Amanda replied automatically, not seeming to be interested at all. 'Just tell him I dropped by and give him that envelope please, thank you so much. I have to go now' she said flustered as she glanced at her watch, speaking now in a mumble. 'Dammit I'm already late...'

She rushed past him without another word, heading towards the lift. Kevin watched her enter the lift and vanish, turning away then towards the apartment door, unlocking it and stepping in.

Kevin closed the door behind him, looking around the apartment. Everything was eerily still, and the apartment was as tidy as always.

Kevin moved further into the open space, calling out.

'Justin?!'

He was met with only silence.

Kevin reached the bottom of the stairs, glancing up. He had never been upstairs before, the only thing that was really up there was Justin's bedroom, and his office.

*Maybe he's up there working* Kevin thought, beginning to march up the stairs.

He reached the top of the stairs, heading first to the office, which was empty. Kevin had never seen the office before, he leaned in, looking about. It was a nice room, spacious and modern in design.

He closed the door, heading to the bedroom. He knocked first, hearing nothing, then tentatively opened the door.

He baulked then, drawing back slightly as he saw Alicia standing there with her back to him, the top-half of her body naked, wearing only pants.

'I'm sorry' Kevin fumbled reaching for the door to close it, 'I did knock...I...'

And then Alicia turned then fully, standing and facing Kevin head on.

Kevin stared in shock at Alicia, staring at the flat chest, and looking down he saw....

*Penis????*

Kevin drew back then in shock, releasing his hold on the handle and standing in the doorway frozen.

'Y-you're a boy?!'

'Yeah' Alicia smiled sweetly. 'Surprise!'

Alicia raised his hand to his head, pulling off his wig, his false long auburn hair came away to reveal the natural brown hair underneath. And as Kevin's attention drifted to the room itself, he saw resting on the side a dress, its neck high and sleeves long, and beside that, fake breasts.

Kevin's mind began to work feverishly, and he remembered suddenly, the sounds of Justin and Alicia making love.

'He's gay?!' Kevin fumbled, referring to Justin.

'Nah he's just pretending to fuck me' Alicia replied sarcastically.

‘I’m so sorry’ Kevin flushed, grabbing the door and slamming it shut. He hurried downstairs, dropping the envelope upon the kitchen counter and standing there. The door to the bedroom upstairs opened, and Kevin wheeled around, seeing Alicia standing there still in his tight underwear, the very manly bulge at the front was clearly visible. ‘I hope I didn’t scare you too much’ Alicia gleamed as he descended the stairs calmly, moving slowly, hand upon the banister. He never took his eyes off Kevin.

‘I’m sorry’ Kevin said again. ‘I didn’t know.’

‘You are to keep this a secret’ Alicia told him firmly, ‘do you understand?’

Kevin swallowed the lump in his throat.

‘Yes of course’ he said, ‘I will. I swear.’ He thought of something then. ‘Wait...is this what the scandal was about?’ he asked Alicia, leaning back against the counter behind him for support. ‘Did something get out?’

Alicia sighed wearily. ‘Unfortunately, something got out, some reporter got some.... *pictures...*’ Alicia finished, ‘it caused a lot of trouble for Justin. He’s a famous model, a figure many look up to, and unfortunately people expect him to behave a certain way because of it...to *be* a certain way.....it makes him very sad.’

‘So what happened?’ Kevin gasped, still recovering from the shock.

Alicia raised his head, standing with his hand on his hip. ‘It was covered up’ he explained, ‘but things were never the same. Justin’s been working hard on maintaining his reputation.’

‘That’s awful’ Kevin said.

‘Hm?’

‘To pretend to be something you’re not...to hide who you really are because of others.... I think you should be true to yourself.’

Alicia raised his head slightly, a slow smile spreading across his face.

Kevin moved away, going over to sit upon the sofa.

‘You’re...’ Alicia began, ‘not put off by this?’

‘People can do what they want’ Kevin replied shortly. ‘It’s not my place to judge.’

‘Justin and I are not in a relationship’ Alicia said then.

‘You’re not?’ Kevin was surprised.

‘No’ Alicia said. ‘We do not love each other. He just uses me for pleasure.... he has quite the sexual appetite, it’s quite an effort to keep up with him.’

‘What?’

Alicia turned his eyes onto Kevin then.

‘You’re ok with people being gay....?’

‘Sure’ Kevin frowned up at him. ‘Why wouldn’t I be?’

‘Well some people don’t like that sort of thing’ Alicia reasoned.

‘I’m open to new things’ Kevin replied. ‘As long as it’s consensual...and no one is getting hurt...’

‘And what if they chose to consensually get hurt?’

Kevin furrowed his brow, raising his head up at Alicia.

Alicia approached Kevin, leaning over him and caressing his cheek tenderly, their faces inches apart.

‘You say you’re open to new things’ Alicia spoke seductively. ‘Well how about this?’

Kevin flushed nervously, struggling to find his words.

‘I...I don’t know.... I never....’

‘You don’t have a problem with it do you?’

Kevin met Alicia’s gaze.

‘No’ he whispered. ‘I don’t really...’

‘So, would you like to try something new?’ Alicia spoke teasingly, running his fingers through Kevin’s hair.

‘But I thought you and Justin...’

‘I told you we’re not a couple’ Alicia said, ‘though he still likes to act like he owns me.’

Kevin pursed his lips.

‘I could teach you how it’s done’ Alicia gleamed. ‘It’s difficult at first...but like me, you may come to enjoy it...even *need* it.... just say the word. Say *yes*...and I will...’

Kevin’s eyes widened slightly, as Alicia dipped his head.

‘I will make love to you...’ he finished.

Kevin stared back in shock, unable to find his words.

‘I promise I won’t do anything you don’t want me to’ Alicia whispered to him, ‘and I promise I won’t hurt you. Just say *yes*...and I will show you how good it can feel.’ He smiled then, his eyes shining bright, ‘and Justin...does not own me. I do whatever gives me pleasure.’

Kevin swallowed the lump in his throat, grasping the edge of the sofa as his heart pounded against his ribcage.

‘So?’ Alicia prompted. ‘Would you like to try it?’

‘Um....’

‘I promise I’ll be gentle’ Alicia told him caressing his cheek, ‘I promise I won’t hurt you...I just need to hear you say.....*yes*....’

Kevin gritted his teeth, drawing a slow and steady breath.

‘Yes’ he said. He laughed awkwardly then. ‘Why not?’

Alicia grinned wider, unable to control himself.

‘You can tell me to stop anytime’ he said, caressing Kevin with both hands now, ‘just say the word...’

Kevin’s eyes grew wide then as Alicia closed the space between them, kissing him on the lips, he grimaced slightly, his body tense.

‘Try to relax a little’ Alicia said moving back and running his thumb over Kevin’s lower lip, ‘.... take a deep breath and calm yourself.’

Kevin did so, trying to calm his nerves.

‘What’s wrong?’ Alicia asked.

‘It just feels so strange’ Kevin breathed. ‘Doing this with a stranger.... a guy.... even....’

‘It gets better’ Alicia purred, leaning closer again. ‘Open your mouth.’

Kevin drew another breath, as soon as his mouth was open, Alicia kissed him again, slipping his tongue into him in a deep kiss.

Kevin craned his head back away from him, but Alicia only moved forward, tasting Kevin as much as he could taste.

Alicia broke away suddenly, and Kevin drew a deep gasp, but Alicia wasn’t done yet.

He grabbed Kevin’s hand, bringing it to his own crotch. Kevin felt that Alicia was already getting hard, and Alicia, still holding Kevin, used his hand to caress himself.

Alicia made a noise of satisfaction, letting go of Kevin then and pulling his underwear down, fully revealing himself to Kevin.

‘We can stop if you want’ he said to Kevin, ‘I don’t want to make you uncomfortable.’

Kevin raised his head to Alicia then, smiling awkwardly. ‘It’s ok’ he breathed, ‘I....’ he looked down again, still a little nervous, his expression that of concentration.

This time he reached forwards on his own, touching Alicia, their naked flesh, there was nothing between them now.

‘Would you like to suck it?’

Kevin glanced up, drawing back slightly.

‘I.... I don’t think I’m ready for something like that.’

‘From behind then’ Alicia said, not missing a beat.

Kevin began to feel nervous again.

‘First let me try to relax you a little more’ Alicia offered, kneeling before Kevin and reaching for the button of his trousers. ‘I know what I’m doing...I’ll show you...’

Kevin didn’t try to resist as Alicia bowed his head, licking Kevin between the legs teasingly. It didn’t take long before it began to feel good.

Kevin craned his head back, closing his eyes. He let out a moan.

‘You’re getting hard’ Alicia said. ‘Does that feel good?’

‘Yeah’ Kevin gasped, ‘that feels...good...’

Kevin shifted slightly, spreading his legs further. Alicia’s hand moved down to his inner thigh, grasping him there.

‘You can come in my mouth’ Alicia told him, caressing Kevin with his other hand. ‘I don’t mind.’

Kevin bowed his head, looking down at Alicia.

‘Can I finish you?’ Alicia asked, continuing to caress Kevin with one hand, his other hand, going to himself.

‘Yeah’ Kevin breathed. ‘If you...are ok with it.’

Alicia giggled playfully then, running his tongue up Kevin’s shaft.

‘I am more than ok with it’ he said, before deep-throating Kevin’s entire piece as far as it would go.

Kevin let out another moan, louder this time as Alicia began to move faster and faster.

His body contorted then, and his hand shot up to grab Alicia roughly by the hair. Alicia stopped suddenly, eyes fluttered, looking up.

Kevin let out a sigh, cheeks red. He let go of Alicia, who raised his head, keeping his mouth close around Kevin until the end, careful not to make a mess, careful not to spill.

His hand went to his mouth as he hunched his shoulders, and Kevin heard as Alicia swallowed loudly.

Alicia wiped his mouth with the back of his hand, before straightening up again, smiling at Kevin.

‘How was that?’

‘Yeah’ Kevin breathed, a little flustered. ‘That felt really good.’

‘I know’ Alicia gleamed, eyes bright. ‘Now.... will you allow me to finish?’

‘Haa’ Kevin breathed. ‘Yeah...sure.’

Alicia rose to his feet, Kevin saw that he was still hard.

‘Turn around’ Alicia said. ‘Kneel on the sofa, lean forward with your elbows on the back of the sofa.’

Kevin did as he was told, leading forwards against the back of the sofa.

He felt as Alicia slipped his hand into his trousers behind him, pushing his fingers inside, first one, then another.

‘Just try to relax’ Alicia whispered into Kevin’s ear as he continued to slip his middle finger in and out. ‘I will treat you right.’

He played with Kevin for a short time, before stopping.

Alicia pulled away, grasping Kevin’s trousers and pulling them down, positioning himself behind him.

‘It’s ok...’ Alicia breathed, leaning forwards over Kevin as he grimaced, ‘it’s ok...just try to relax.’

Kevin let out a breath, shoulders lowering slightly.

Alicia’s hand went to himself then, and he pushed forwards into Kevin, doing so gently.

Kevin gritted his teeth together, shoulders hunched, grasping the back of the sofa with clawed hands.

‘Are you alright?’ Alicia asked him, leaning forward to whisper in his ear.

‘Yeah’ Kevin gasped, ‘it just.... feels strange.’

Alicia smiled, tilting his head. ‘It will at first. Just try to relax.’ He paused then. ‘I’m going all the way in.’

Alicia waited for a few moments.

‘Haaa’ Kevin gasped, as he felt Alicia push deeper into him.

He felt Alicia nuzzle him then, rasping as he bit his ear sharply.

‘There’s a good boy’ Alicia smirked.

He pulled back slightly, before thrusting forwards, causing Kevin to cry out.

Alicia grasped Kevin tightly around the waist, thrusting into him again and again, but his movements were gentle, tender.

‘How does it feel?’ Alicia asked, pausing for a moment. ‘I’m not hurting you am I?’

‘Ah’ Kevin gasped, the edges of his eyes crinkling, ‘it’s just.... really intense...’

Alicia smiled, pushing forwards again.

‘I should warn you if things ever go this way between you and Justin’ Alicia began, ‘he’s really big’ he told him, ‘and savage.... He’s a lot to handle.’

‘What?’ Kevin gasped.

Alicia suddenly lifted a leg, resting a foot against the edge of the sofa as he thrust into Kevin again, this time harder. Kevin threw his head back, moaning loudly. Alicia’s hand shot up then, grabbing Kevin by the hair as he continued to take his pleasure.

‘You’re so fucking tight’ Alicia rasped as he continued his rhythm. ‘I love the fresh ones... such a handsome boy...’

The door to the apartment opened suddenly then, and Justin came walking in. He froze with his hand on the door as he saw the pair before him, Kevin kneeling and resting against the back of the sofa, and Alicia fucking him from behind.

A period of shocked silence followed. Only Alicia appeared to be relaxed.

‘Oh, hey Justin’ he said casually. ‘You’re home really early.’

Justin's face contorted with rage, and he slammed the door shut behind him, but he did not move from that spot.

Kevin buried his face in the sofa, bright red and heart hammering in his chest.

*What the fuck....? How did this happen????*

A few moments later and they were all sitting in the lounge, Justin in a single seat, and Kevin and Alicia on the sofa, sitting at opposite ends away from each other. Both of them looked unhappy, Kevin was tense and averting his eyes, and Alicia just looked irritated. He was wearing his dress and wig and fake breasts now, he looked indistinguishable from a woman, but now Kevin knew, and he could not see Alicia the same again.

'This is fucking bullshit' Alicia complained bitterly, sitting with his legs crossed and arms folded, '...I didn't even get to come.'

'How long has this been going on?' Justin asked, speaking in a dangerous whisper. He was livid.

'Just today' Alicia replied carelessly. 'I really like him' he added, turning to grin at Kevin, who glanced back at him with wide eyes, '...a nice supple boy....and such a tight fit.'

'Enough' Justin barked.

'I'm sorry' Kevin fumbled, 'it was a mistake...'

Justin shot him a glare, and Kevin fell instantly silent.

'What are you talking about?' Alicia continued calmly speaking to Kevin. 'You liked it...you came in my mouth.'

The next reaction was a mix between Justin's outrage and Kevin's panic as he tried to shut Alicia up.

'I can't believe you would do this to me' Justin hissed at Alicia.

'I told you I'm not your property!' Alicia snapped, getting angry himself now. 'I'll let you do all the fucked-up shit to me you want but you can never *own* me!'

Things were never the same after that...

## Chapter Four

### Parting Ways

In the days that followed, Kevin spent as much time as he could away from the apartment, coming home only when it was very late, and going straight to his room.

In the meantime, he hung out with his friends, or went on pretend dates with Anastasia, all the while making his position of not wanting a relationship clear. But she still kept trying.

And in the daytime during school when everyone else was in class, he wandered about the town just trying to waste time. The money his parents had given him was going to run out before long, and it was time he thought about finding a place to work.

But more than anything else that was on his mind, he thought of Lisa, his childhood sweetheart, and his oldest friend.

He came to a shop window, pausing to look at the TV's and computers behind the glass, and then his vision focused on his own reflection staring back at him.

*How did things get so fucked up.....how am I supposed to face Justin after this?*

He decided to meet Christina after that, who had left school early to tend to her job.

He met her in the coffee shop, where she worked most of her hours. She also had a job in a restaurant, but only worked a few hours a week there.

'Hey' Kevin waved at her as she hurried past him.

'Oh hey' she replied flustered, carrying a tray of dirty glasses. 'What are you doing here?'

'Can I go around to your place with you when you're finished?' Kevin asked her.

'Is everything alright?' she shot quickly back.

'Yeah yeah' Kevin answered hurriedly. 'I just want to talk to you about something. Everything's fine I swear.'

'Ok, I finish work in a few hours, can you wait until then?'

'I've got all the time in the world' Kevin smiled warmly at her, leaning forwards with his arms folded on the table. 'I don't mind hanging around. I like to watch you work.'

'Right' she sighed, taking the menu from him. 'Can I get you anything? My manager is watching me.'

Kevin glanced over her shoulder to see a tall man standing behind the counter and working at the till, the man was indeed watching them.

'A cappuccino' Kevin said. 'And another one in an hour.'

Christina looked tired as she walked away, heading back behind the counter.

Kevin's expression dampened as he watched her.

*Poor girl* he thought. *She works so hard all the time...*

She brought him his order and went away quickly afterwards. It was comfortable in the café and Kevin liked it here very much, even more so that he could watch Christina work. Almost every time she appeared, his attention would drift towards her, but she was too busy to notice.

Kevin smiled to himself, taking another sip from his third cup. He had left to go to the bathroom several times but ordered several more cups by the time Christina had finished her shift.

She hung up her apron when she was done, moving groggily through her exhaustion.

'I can't wait to get home and rest' she sighed.

'Are you sure you don't mind me staying with you?'

'You've hung around for hours in the café' Christina said giving him a tired smile, 'I could hardly change my mind now could I? And besides' she added turning to him and stroking his face, 'I would never do that to you. You are always welcome at my place, you know that.'

Kevin caught her hand as it fell.

'I know' he whispered, holding her hand to his cheek.

Christina's place was a short walk and a short bus ride away. It wasn't an entirely pleasant place to be and was situated in a bit of a rough area. But despite Kevin's initial concerns and protests when Christina had first come here, she had managed this long here.

Kevin glanced about him as they headed towards the flats, graffiti was everywhere, rowdy gangs of youths hung around late at night, and there was often a lot of noise in the area. But despite first appearances, this was not as dangerous a place as many assumed, and Christina had never experienced any trouble, and for that Kevin was immensely grateful.

This building itself was run down and neglected, inside Christina's apartment was far more appealing, and she had done with it what she could.

'Can I get you anything?' she offered him, unlocking her front door and holding it open for him.

They had travelled in silence, Christina too tired to speak, and Kevin not wanting to push her. 'I'm fine' he said to her heading straight for the kitchen, 'let me get you something though.' Christina turned on the heating as Kevin began to fill the kettle up, moving around the kitchen he knew exactly where everything was. He had been here many times and was almost as familiar with the place as Christina was.

'Why don't you have a bath?' Kevin suggested. 'It might help you relax.'

Christina who had flumped back on the sofa turned to him with a glower.

'Not before you talk to me.'

'What do you mean?' Kevin asked her, pausing to glance around.

'You've been acting different for a few days, don't think I haven't noticed. So, what's happened?'

Kevin groaned then, putting the pot of sugar down and facing her.

'You didn't mention it before' he spoke quietly.

'I didn't want to pester you' she replied, 'but it's clear you're not going to say anything.... or maybe you wanted to come over to tell me now. Either way I think it's time you told me.'

'Alright' Kevin relented. 'You're right. I think it's time I told you...I would never tell anyone else.... there is no one else I trust more.'

A few moments of silence passed as they waited for the kettle to boil. Kevin poured each of them a tea and brought the two mugs over to the sofa. He put the mugs down on the low table and sat next to Christina.

'Aren't you tired of drinking?' Christina asked him, 'you've had so much today.'

'No' Kevin mumbled offhandedly, scratching at his side, '...no.'

His hand went to his mouth absently, as beside him Christina waited.

'It's about Justin' Kevin began nervously.

'Oh, what's he done?' Christina groaned tiredly.

'It's not something he's done' Kevin continued, hunching his shoulders.

'Hm?' Christina narrowed her eyes at him then, her expression fixed. 'You're tense' she told him shortly. 'Why?'

'Well...' Kevin hesitated, 'how do I say this....?'

Christina's first reaction when Kevin had finished was to laugh.

'H-hey it's not funny!'

'Are you kidding?!' she cackled, 'that's the best story I've heard in a long time... especially coming from you!' She stopped laughing abruptly, expression turning serious, though the wild look was still in her eyes.

'So what was it like?'

'What was what like?'

'Anal?'

'You're asking me that?!' Kevin spluttered. 'Haven't you ever tried it yourself?'

'What are you kidding? No freaking way!'

Kevin flushed as she continued to laugh at him.

'Please' he begged her, 'please don't...'

She fell silent then, watching him closely out of the corner of her eye, relenting.

'Alright' she sighed, 'I'm sorry. You're right I shouldn't laugh.'

Kevin groaned miserably to himself. He felt so frustrated and confused.

'So why did you do it?' Christina asked him seriously, 'you're not gay are you?'

'No' Kevin answered, 'I just.... thought I'd try it out.'

'You *thought you'd try it out*?' Christina repeated flatly.

'Oh, it's stupid' Kevin grumbled to his lap, balling his fists together. 'I didn't think...I just thought...'

'Go on' Christina urged. 'I'm interested.'

'I mean there's nothing wrong with being gay and I thought.....why should guys like only girls? It was kinda confusing' he added with an awkward laugh. 'He had me so convinced he was a girl...and then I saw...'

'Was it nice?' Christina asked him seriously. 'Did you enjoy it?'

'I.... yeah, I mean....it felt good, a bit weird but....'

'I guess girls and a boys mouths don't feel much different when it comes to head' Christina said, leaning back on the sofa. 'So, what are you going to do now?'

'I just need to stay away for a while' Kevin spoke quietly. 'He probably doesn't ever want to see me again...' he groaned again, furious at his own mistake. 'Alicia just swept me off my feet' he told her, 'I was caught up in the moment.'

'Oh you...' Christina sighed, closing her eyes. 'I just love having you around...'

She opened her eyes then.

'When are you meeting Lisa?'

'Tomorrow' Kevin breathed, feeling his heart skip a little in trepidation, and excitement also.

'I see her tomorrow...'

'Are you nervous?'

'More so the closer the moment comes' Kevin smiled turning to her.

'Well as least the bruises on your face are nearly gone' Christina smiled. 'You can hardly see them at all now. If she asks how you got them...you can tell her something innocent like you fell off your bicycle. If you tell her what really happened you'll probably make her worry.'

‘I’m not a child’ he scowled at her, ‘and neither is she.’

Christina smiled warmly at him, flopping on her side away from him and hugging a pillow to her.

‘You must really like her’ she spoke with sincerity, ‘I’ve never seen you blush like that before.’

Kevin flushed further.

‘I’m not blushing!’ Kevin protested loudly.

‘So, when are you going to get married buy a house and have thirty-three babies together?’

‘Shut up’ he said, grabbing a pillow by his side and throwing it at her.

She caught it in the air, hugging it too and snuggling up.

‘I’m going rest for a while’ she said to him. ‘Ok? You can watch TV if you like, just keep the volume down.’

‘Sure’ Kevin mumbled, watching her. ‘No problem.’

Kevin stayed in Christina’s apartment overnight, waking early the next morning.

He walked with Christina to school, saying goodbye to her at the gates.

‘When do you return back to school?’

‘I don’t know’ Kevin shook his head. ‘Soon in think.’

She smiled wearily at him, touching his face briefly.

‘They’re nearly gone’ she spoke in a mumble, before withdrawing her hand. ‘I’ll see you later.’

‘Yeah’ Kevin nodded. ‘Take it easy ok?’

She nodded tiredly and turned away.

Kevin watched her go, lingering at the entrance of the school grounds. He glanced to the side, recognising a figure in the distance. It was Jessica, and she was with her friends.

Kevin raised his hand to wave to her, and Jessica waved back, smiling.

Kevin went away then, heading towards the train station. With every step he drew closer to the station, he became ever more nervous.

For years he had longed to see Lisa again, now at last he would, and he was overcome with nerves, but longing at the same time, and excitement.

He was still very early when he arrived, Lisa’s train would not reach the station for another few hours. But he didn’t care, he wanted to wait here for her, and watch the trains come and go.

He found a small table at a café, and stayed here while he waited for her, watching the people going about their lives, gazing out of the window silently.

He glanced around, looking towards the clock upon the wall as around him, the quiet murmur of the customers continued. He felt a jolt in his heart as he saw the hour. It was time.

Kevin placed his hands flat upon the table, pushing himself up.

He walked out of the café, palms sweating. He headed over to the correct platform, standing there as his heart hammered in his chest.

A few minutes passed, and he watched the timetable above his head.

The train suddenly appeared, drawing closer to the platform and coming to a gentle stop.

Kevin drew a slow and deep breath, watching the doors of the train.

About a minute passed as the passengers filed slowly off the train, and then he saw her. Lisa stepped off the train and onto the platform, facing the other way, looking out for him. And then she looked towards him, eyes lighting up as she spotted him. Kevin's breath caught in his throat as she made her way over to him, pulling with her a wheeled suitcase. She was a sweet young girl, about a year younger than Kevin, with a petite build and a head shorter than Kevin in height. She had bright blue eyes and a curtain of black hair, and she almost always dressed wearing flowers. That was the way she was as a child, and that about her had not changed as she grew up. She slowed to a stop as she approached him, maintaining a short distance between them as she smiled. 'Kevin' she spoke. 'It's so good to see you.' He smiled back at her, the edges of his lips twitching nervously. 'I've missed you' he breathed.

Lisa left him for a short time, visiting her father's home to drop off her luggage, meeting Kevin again at the base of the building her father was staying. 'It's good to get rid of my stuff' she smiled sweetly at him. 'I hated dragging that suitcase around.' Kevin smiled warmly back at her. 'Where shall we go first?' she asked him, holding her hands behind her back and swaying. 'Well...' he began nervously, 'a-are you hungry?' 'Yeah' she smiled. 'Let's go get something to eat together. Take me to a nice place' she beamed. 'Ha' Kevin breathed, 'a-alright...let me think.' He paused for a moment. 'Ok...I know where we should go. It's this way' he pointed, turning to walk in that direction. 'Ok' Lisa replied happily, moving to walk with him. She reached out to him as they went, taking him by the hand as they walked together. Kevin stared ahead trying to remain calm, but he couldn't swallow the lump in his throat, and all he could hear was blood rushing in his ears. *I can't believe after all this time we're together again* he thought to himself, grasping her hand tighter in his. *.....I've missed her so much.....*

They walked for a long time together, moving away from the centre of the town, and towards quieter areas on the outskirts.

The town was a very busy place, but on the edges there were patches of greenery, little areas of woodland, scattered areas of tranquillity. When they were children, Kevin and Lisa often came to areas like these to play, they would make dens together, swings and shelters. They hid away often in their days together, Kevin remembered on rainy days they would huddle together, they would bring food out to these places and have picnics and play board games.

In one of these dens many years ago, they had shared their first kiss.

Kevin and Lisa spent hours together, catching up on old times, talking, smiling, laughing.

Lisa and Kevin sat side by side, facing the little stream that trickled water. The leaves blew gently around them, and the little birds sang. As time went on, Kevin began to relax a little, getting over his initial nerves. Lisa on the other hand, had been completely relaxed from the moment that had met at the train station.

At one point, Lisa shuffled closer to Kevin, leaning into him, her head bowed against his shoulder.

Kevin's heart skipped in his chest as she did this, staring down at her with wide eyes.

He let out a sigh, shoulders relaxed. Kevin dipped his head, resting his cheek against Lisa's head.

He put his arm around her, holding her close.

After that, Kevin and Lisa went back to Kevin's home to see his parents. They welcome Kevin and Lisa warmly, cooking for them, the four of them shared a meal together.

As Lisa spoke to both his parents, telling them about her life, Kevin felt a strong surge of love towards her.

Kevin had known Lisa almost his entire life, and from the very moment they first met as children, they had liked each other, and had become close friends.

Over the years, Kevin's feelings towards Lisa had changed, gradually becoming something more than just friendship. But it had never progressed anywhere, as Lisa had moved away with her father due to his work. Losing her that day felt like his heart had been ripped from his chest. Now she had come back to him.

Kevin put his elbow on the table, resting his chin on his palm as he watched Lisa continue to talk to his parents happily.

At the back of his mind however, another memory stirred within him, of another girl he had once known and lost, but of one he would never see again.

Afterwards, Kevin walked Lisa home.

'Thank you for today' Lisa said to him, as they reached the building her father was staying. 'I really had fun today.'

'Yeah' Kevin smiled widely. 'I did too.'

'It was really nice to see you again...after all this time.'

‘Yeah...it was...’ Kevin replied, ‘I mean...it was nice to see you again.’  
She smiled.  
‘Can we meet again,’ Lisa asked him, ‘tomorrow maybe?’  
‘I would love that’ Kevin nodded. ‘I want to see you as much as possible before you go.’  
She nodded slowly.  
‘Maybe you can tell me how you got those bruises’ she said to him.  
Kevin’s heart jolted then, as he raised his hand unconsciously to his face.  
‘This...this is nothing...’ he mumbled.  
‘Don’t lie to me’ she spoke softly.  
Kevin smiled in return.  
‘See you tomorrow then’ she said to him, stepping forward and giving him a tight hug.  
‘Yeah’ Kevin mumbled, holding her back. ‘I look forward to it.’  
She stepped back, looking up into his face. She was a head shorter than him, and her height only came up to the top of his shoulders.  
‘Well then’ she sighed, ‘bye....’  
She turned and walked away, the skirt of her dress swaying as she went.  
Kevin stared after her, his eyes dreamy, he sighed.

‘It’s so great to see her again, I can’t believe it after all this time’ Kevin was saying.  
‘Mh-hm’ Christina mumbled, working in the kitchen.  
She came back to him, putting a plate of food before him.  
‘Mm this looks really good’ Kevin said.  
‘No need to flatter’ Christina smiled.  
‘No, I mean it’ he said.  
She sat at the table opposite him, leaning forwards on her elbows and beginning to eat ungracefully.  
‘You’re right it is good’ she said. ‘Hey can I have some money?’ she asked him suddenly.  
‘Oh...’ he said glancing up. ‘Yeah sure.’  
‘I hope it’s not a problem’ she said.  
‘No, I should have enough’ he said to her. ‘I saved a bit before I moved out’ he explained.  
‘But um...I do need to make a bit more’ he admitted.  
‘You want to get a job?’ Christina offered.  
‘Yeah’ Kevin said. ‘I did glance briefly at the noticeboard in the post office some time ago...’  
‘What happened to your last job?’ she asked him.  
‘I um...well the guy was a dick.’  
‘You mean your boss?’  
‘Yeah’ Kevin said. ‘I don’t mind taking orders but some people just like bossing people around because they can.....I wasn’t taking any of that.’  
‘Hm. Well.’ Christina leant back in her chair with a heavy sigh. ‘One of the places I work at is currently hiring’ she said to him. ‘If you’re interested I could ask for you?’

‘Oh yes’ Kevin said eagerly. ‘That would be awesome if I could get a job....it would get me out of that dam apartment’ he grumbled, thinking about Justin. ‘And it would keep me busy when I’m out of school.’

‘When do you go back?’

‘Um. Next week I think.

Christina bowed her head.

‘You haven’t seen Justin again?’

‘No’ Kevin said cutting up his food, ‘not since that day.’

They continued to eat in silence after that.

The next day, Kevin met with Lisa again. He met her outside the building where her father was staying, his heart skipping in his chest as she danced up to him.

‘Are we ready to go?’ Lisa gleamed at him, weaving her arm through his.

‘Um...yeah...’ Kevin grinned down at her, blushing slightly as she smiled up at him.

*She’s so pretty.... oh god.... stay calm self!*

‘Let’s go’ he began. ‘Where would you like to go first?’

‘Anywhere as long as I’m with you’ she cooed.

Kevin’s heart soared then, rising in his chest and staying there, not coming down.

‘I uh.... I just thought of something’ Kevin spoke out loud. ‘Do you remember the ice rink?’

Lisa gasped with excitement, eyes wide with anticipation and shimmering.

‘We haven’t been there for years’ she breathed.

‘I haven’t been there since we were there together last’ Kevin replied.

Lisa squealed in delight, squeezing his arm tightly, before slowly letting go of him.

‘It’s such a nice day today’ Lisa said to him. ‘I know it’s a long way but, do you think we could walk there?’

‘Of course.’

Lisa beamed, balling her fists over her chest.

‘Do you think...we could hold hands?’ she asked him.

Kevin’s stomach tightened nervously.

‘I-I.... would love that...’

She beamed at him, reaching her hand out for him to take.

Kevin reached out to her in turn, taking her hand in his left hand, holding her firmly but gently.

‘I’m having fun already’ she said to him.

‘Yeah’ he replied. ‘Me too.’

The walk was over an hour, but it went by very quickly, Lisa and Kevin’s continued conversation flowing back and forth so fluidly, even their periods of silence were comfortable, and as they went, Kevin glanced over towards Lisa as they walked hand in hand.

She caught his glance, looking back at him in turn.

He smiled at her warmly, this time his nervous waves had gone. He was totally calm now.

She gave him a cheesy grin, causing him to chuckle.

They walked on in silence.

They reached the ice rink and Kevin offered to pay, insisting over Lisa's protests. She waited a step behind him happily as he made a request for their ice skates.

'Here' he said handing hers to her.

'Just as I remember' she said, holding them in her hands, before lowering them, glancing back up at him. 'Come on' she said shoving him playfully with her shoulder. 'Let's go.'

Minutes later Lisa sat on one of the benches, staring down at Kevin who knelt before her, tying her shoelaces.

'Ok?' he grinned up at her when he was done.

'Yeah' she said blushing.

'Come on then' he said rising, he had already put his own skates on. 'Let's get on the ice.'

She took his hand she offered to him, allowing him to pull her into a stand.

They walked awkwardly across the floor, heading towards the ice.

Kevin pulled back, allowing Lisa onto the ice first and following after her.

It was difficult walking on the skates, but once on the ice, they were graceful in each other's arms.

They both wore only thin shirts, but it was only moments before they began to warm up. Breaking apart for a moment they skated side by side, jumping up in the air and turning sharply, skating backwards now and performing a spin. Lisa lost her balance and fell with a bump on the ice. Kevin turned back to her, breaking sharply and spraying her with ice, causing her to protest loudly.

He leant down to help her up, taking both her hands in his.

'I'm sorry' he laughed, brushing ice from her face, 'are you ok?'

'Yeah' she giggled, brushing her nose playfully. 'I'm good.'

Kevin took her hands again, pulling her forwards. Kevin skated backwards, pulling Lisa with him as she skated forwards. He let go of one of her hands, skating with her hand in his around the rink, careful to avoid the other people around, though it was quiet on this day. At one point, Lisa laughed at Kevin, who broke away from her to perform some fancy footwork on the ice, spinning again and again. Lisa clapped approvingly, copying him.

They were both experienced skaters, having spent so many days of their childhood practicing. Even after years without practice, neither of them forgot how to skate.

They skated for hours, coming off the ice only when they began to get hungry, Kevin helping her off the ice.

They ate in the café on the balcony overlooking the rink, watching now the other people skate.

'Oh, I'm having so much fun!' Lisa declared at one point, leaning back and kicking her fleet playfully. 'Aren't you having fun?' she said to Kevin.

‘Yeah I am’ Kevin grinned happily back. ‘It’s so great to...you know...’

‘Just like old times hu?’ Lisa replied, slurping through her straw loudly and glancing up at him.

They had both finished their meals now and were nearly ready to go.

Kevin received a text on his mobile then, pulling it from his pocket.

He read it.

‘Oh’ he said.

‘Is everything alright?’ Lisa asked, putting her drink down.

‘Yes’ Kevin replied. ‘My parents want me to come home. They have something to tell me.’

‘Do you want me to go away?’

‘Oh no of course not’ Kevin fumbled. ‘I want you with me...if you want to I mean.’

‘Of course,’ Lisa gleamed. ‘I want to stay with you as long as possible.’

They walked quickly to Kevin’s home, Kevin feeling a little nervous, his trepidation growing with every footstep.

‘Are you alright Kevin?’ Lisa asked.

‘Yeah’ Kevin grinned, ‘I’m fine.’

‘What did the text say?’

‘Well my mum and dad said before that they wanted to move house’ he explained. ‘I mean...it’s more than that’ he continued, dipping his head. ‘They want to leave this county, and travel the world, because of their business as tour guides.’ Kevin faced ahead then. ‘I guess they’re leaving far sooner than I thought. They want to see me now.’

But when they reached the house, Kevin was shocked by what he saw.

His parents both greeted before the house him with hugs. As they broke away from him, Kevin looked about at the front garden. There were sealed boxes being moved from the house and to a truck waiting on the road before the home.

‘What’s going on here?’ Kevin asked his parents, his voice wavering as he spoke.

‘We are leaving’ his mother said to him. ‘This all happened very suddenly, and our dear neighbour is sorting out the house.’

‘Sorting out the house?’ Kevin repeated.

‘We’re selling the house’ his mother said to him, as his father stood by her side smiling quietly. ‘We’re going to be leaving on the plane in a few hours.’

Kevin blinked in shock at this, tears brimming in his eyes.

‘Don’t be sad dear’ his mother said then, cupping his face and pressing her forehead against his. ‘You can still call us anytime.’

‘I can’t believe you’re really leaving’ Kevin whimpered, as Lisa watched quietly a short distance away.

‘I’m sorry about this’ his father voiced suddenly. ‘This just happened suddenly, we didn’t expect to leave so soon.’

‘We are staying with a friend far away’ his mother said. ‘Everything we have is being sold.’

Kevin looked down now as his mother pressed something into his hand.

‘There’s enough here for you to look after yourself for a while.’

Kevin stared down at the envelope in shock.

‘I love you very much Kevin.’

‘Mum...’ Kevin uttered.

She hugged him again, cutting off his next words.

‘We’ll be in touch’ his mother whispered to him, holding him tightly.

His mother raised her head as she held him, smiling warmly to Lisa, who smiled back.

Kevin broke away from his mother then, turning to his father who embraced him tightly.

‘I’m sorry’ his father said to him, ‘I know this is sudden.’

Kevin stepped back, smiling up at his father with tears in his eyes.

‘Thank you’ Kevin breathed, speaking in a whisper, not trusting his voice to speak. ‘Thank you for everything you’ve done for me... almost my whole life.... I know that... you are not my real parents but.... so often I forget.’

‘Oh honey’ his mother sobbed, grasping him again tightly.

His father stepped forwards again, hugging them both.

‘Thank you’ Kevin said to them again, beginning to cry into his mother’s shoulder. ‘Thank you...’

Kevin and Lisa stood at the end of the driveway minutes later, watching the vehicles drive away.

Kevin raised his hand, waving slowly at his parents briefly, before they too drove away, the van carrying everything they owned following after them.

Kevin looked back towards the house, which was now completely empty, all the furniture had been removed. The home seemed so desolate now.

‘Kevin?’ Lisa spoke tentatively, turning towards him. ‘Are you ok?’

Kevin turned to Lisa then, enveloping her in a firm embrace.

She held him back, together they stood at the end of the driveway, in each other’s arms.

‘I’m glad we could have met like this’ Kevin whispered into Lisa’s ear. ‘I’m glad you’re here with me now.’

It was just a few hours later, Kevin walked with Lisa back towards the train station.

‘I don’t know when I will be able to see you again’ Lisa said to him, stopping on the platform and turning to him. ‘I just want you to know that I really had fun with you’ she beamed. ‘I would love to do it again someday.’

‘Yeah’ Kevin said to her, ‘I had fun too.’

Lisa stared at him for a moment, reaching out to Kevin and taking both his hands in hers.

She reached up to him, standing on her tip toes to kiss him on the lips.

Kevin closed his eyes, feeling within his body, sudden calm and serenity.

Lisa leant back on her heels again, taking a step away.  
'This was one of the best days I've had' she said to him.  
Kevin smiled to her warmly, the edges of his eyes crinkling, though he said nothing.  
'Goodbye' Lisa breathed, 'and thank you.'  
Kevin stood waiting on the platform, watching as Lisa boarded the train with her luggage.  
She took a window seat, turning to face him as the train began to depart.  
She waved to him as the train moved away, and Kevin raised his hand, waving to her in return.  
Minutes later, the train was completely out of sight.  
When the train was gone, Kevin collapsed on a bench behind him, sobbing quietly into his hands.

It was the next day, when Kevin decided to risk returning to the apartment.  
Kevin approached the building, glancing up at its shiny front before entering the foyer. He waited for the lift to arrive, then stepped in and pressed the button, waiting again as he stood in the centre of the lift, feeling a little nervous as the lift ascended.  
He reached the top floor and entered the apartment, finding Justin in the kitchen.  
'Hey' Kevin began tentatively.  
'Oh, it's you' Justin glowered.  
'Where is Alicia?' Kevin asked, glancing about.  
'She's gone' Justin told him shortly. 'She left shortly after you did.'  
Kevin turned his eyes towards what Justin was doing.  
'What are you cooking?' Kevin asked.  
'Ready meal' Justin replied.  
Kevin stepped a little closer, staring down at the contents within the plastic container.  
'.... Hu....' he said.  
Alicia, Kevin later found out, had moved onto a new town

## Chapter Five

### For the First Time

'Man, he's still so pissed at me' Kevin grumbled.  
He was at Christina's apartment now, lying back on her sofa with his arm over his eyes.  
Christina sat in the comfy seat a short distance away, curled up with her homework on her lap.  
'Well you did fuck his girlfriend' Christina replied, '.... boyfriend....' she corrected herself, '...whatever...'

‘It was a misunderstanding’ Kevin protested.

‘Nothing misunderstanding about it’ Christina mumbled, not looking up from her work. ‘You let him fuck you...caught in the act...haha’ she finished.

Kevin glowered at her.

‘You’re going to have to go back eventually’ she said to him, looking up at last from her work. ‘You can’t stay here much longer. I’m not allowed tenants, I could get in trouble.’

‘I know’ Kevin grumbled, ‘I know.’ He let out a sigh. ‘I won’t stay much longer I swear. I’m sorry to be trouble’ he said, ‘and thank you for your help.’

She smiled, looking down at her work again.

‘You’re welcome’ she said to him, continuing with her notes.

‘Ack’ Kevin moaned then. ‘I feel so stressed right now...’

Christina stopped what she was doing, glancing up at him then.

‘Do you want to have some fun?’ she asked him casually.

‘Hm’ he thought. ‘If you’re not busy. God, just you asking me turns me on.’

She smiled at him, putting her pen down. ‘I’m never too busy for you.’

‘That’s a lie’ he frowned at her in amusement.

She grinned at that, rising from her seat and moving closer, leaning over him and kissing him.

Kevin opened his mouth, kissing her back, slipping his tongue inside her mouth.

He sat up and pushed her back onto the sofa, leaning over her, caressing her breasts, running his hand down her body and between her legs, caressing her there. He moved his hand up again, slipping beneath her jeans and touching her bare flesh with his fingers. Christina let out a moan as Kevin slipped his middle finger into her, moving it back and forth and in circles.

He moved his hand away then, grasping the top of her trousers and tearing them off as Christina helped him, sitting up then and taking off her shirt. She leant back then against the sofa, wearing only her bra.

Kevin bore over her again, kissing her deeply as she moaned in pleasure, hand going to himself as he unzipped his own trousers, already excited.

Christina gasped as Kevin pushed inside her, arching her back and grasping onto Kevin’s shoulders tightly.

Kevin began to thrust into her, his movements forceful.

‘Don’t stop’ Christina moaned, hanging onto him. ‘Don’t stop...’

Kevin’s hand wound around Christina’s naked thigh, as he continued, pulling her bra down and biting her chest, sucking her and clawing her.

Christina bowed her head, grasping onto Kevin’s hair as he continued to thrust into her, faster now, letting out a groan through gritted teeth as he came.

Kevin let out a sigh, cheeks flushed as Christina beneath him gasped.

She smiled up at him then as she felt his body relax.

‘I love it when you fuck me like this’ she told him. ‘It feels so good to have you inside of me.’

Kevin bowed his head, pulling out of her.

He sat back against the sofa, breathing deeply, head tilted as he stared up at the ceiling.

‘God you make me feel so good’ he gasped.

Christiana giggled at him, sitting up and putting her hand between her legs.

‘I’m gonna clean up’ she told him, ‘you should probably get going, I got stuff to do.’  
‘Sure’ Kevin mumbled, zipping himself up again. ‘I...I got stuff to do as well...’

He returned to the apartment shortly after that, finding the place empty. He sat on the sofa for a short time, reading a magazine and feeling bored, until Justin came home.

He was immediately grouchy.

‘What are you doing?’ he snapped at Kevin.

‘Me? I... *nothing*.’ Kevin put the magazine down. ‘How are you?’ he forced himself to say.

‘Fine’ Justin replied in a tone that suggested he was anything but.

‘Ok’ Kevin forced a laugh, getting up off the sofa and moving away towards his room.

‘That’s just great’ he smiled. ‘Well I’ll see you like tomorrow or something.’

He moved over towards the room, darting in and closing the door quickly behind him.

He leant back against the door, letting out a heavy sigh, hanging his head.

*Jeez that guy can really be scary.*

He straightened up, moving forwards towards the bed and falling on his front, lying across it.

‘Ugh...’ he groaned, turning his head to the side and staring at the wall. ‘It’s too bright in here.’

It was shortly after that, just a few days later that Kevin was allowed to return to school again, his suspension now over.

Jessica was the first one to welcome him through the gates.

‘I’ve been waiting for you’ she gleamed.

Kevin blinked back at her in surprise.

‘I’ve been watching you’ she smiled. ‘Oh wait’ she fumbled catching herself, ‘that sounded kinda creepy, I didn’t mean it to.’

‘Ha’ Kevin laughed, ‘that’s ok. I understand.’

‘I’m just really grateful for what you did before...for me, and I’m sorry I got you into trouble.’

‘You didn’t get me into trouble’ Kevin smiled warmly at her. ‘I chose to get into that fight, and I would do it again.’

Jessica blushed slightly.

‘I...um’ she fumbled looking away. ‘I wanted to give you something’ she reached into her bag then, taking out a little box of chocolates, small enough to fit in your palm, and held together by a little purple bow. ‘I wanted to give you this.’

‘Hm?’ Kevin tilted his head. ‘For me?’

‘Um...y-yes.’

‘Oh, that’s so thoughtful of you’ he said, taking it from her and pulling at the bow.

He took one of the chocolates from inside and looked up at her. ‘Open your mouth’ he said.

‘Hu?’

Kevin leaned closer to her, their faces inches apart, holding the chocolate before her mouth. 'Open' he whispered seductively, '...your mouth.'

Jessica flushed scarlet, obeying him.

He slipped the chocolate in, running his finger briefly across her lip as he moved away again.

He leant back then, straightening up and sauntering past her.

Jessica clapped her hand to her mouth, shoulders hunched and eyes wide, her cheeks were flushed and her heart was pounding in her chest.

Kevin continued to walk, holding the box of chocolates in his hand and feeling extremely satisfied with himself.

He met his friends shortly after before class, laughing and joking with them, turning up to class late because of an interesting discussion they were having.

He met with Anastasia shortly after class has finished, she had sought him out as soon as she had learned that he was back in school after his suspension was lifted.

'Kevin I'm so glad to see you!'

'Oh, hey Anastasia' Kevin beamed confidently. 'It's so good to see you.'

'It is?' Anastasia gleamed excitedly. 'Really?'

'Yeah' Kevin laughed. 'Why wouldn't it be?'

'I've been hoping to see you' Anastasia breathed. 'I um...I was hoping we could go out again like we did before.'

'You know I've made my intentions clear' Kevin said raising an eyebrow.

'I know but....'

'Anyway, I can't tonight, I have to work.'

'Work?'

'Yeah. I got a job now. I work with Christina at the hotel restaurant. She was able to help me get the job. I'm so grateful' he laughed. 'I'm trying to save up to get a place of my own. I uh.... want to move out of the place I'm staying at the moment. It's nice and all but.... well...' he shrugged. 'I just want to get my own place.'

Anastasia giggled then, hand going to her mouth.

'Yeah, that would be nice, I can't wait to get out of my parent's house.'

'Why is that?'

She grumbled, glancing to the ground.

'They nag me all the time, they never get off my back.'

'I miss my parents' Kevin sighed. 'They moved house to uh...you know...life stuff.' He shrugged, standing with his hands in his pockets. 'You know in life' he sighed again, 'you meet new people and move on...things change.'

'Yeah' Anastasia smiled. 'They do.'

Kevin stepped back, waving to her happily.

'Another time then' he sang merrily. 'Bye!'

He turned and sauntered away, Anastasia watched him go, shoulders slumped in disappointment. She hung her head and turned and walked away.

It was just a week or so later, and Kevin was continuing his life as normal. He had been working nearly every day in his new job, working shifts alongside Christina after school, and it was exhausting for him, but he was enjoying every moment of it.

He worked in the restaurant part of the hotel near the centre of the town, not far from his school and in reasonable walking distance so he didn't have to pay for a bus.

He worked mostly in the restaurant, though occasionally did housekeeping also and cleaned the rooms of the hotel upstairs. He worked hard and was quickly liked by the managers and people around him.

Kevin was a confident person and loved meeting new people. He got along with most people around him easily.

On this day, he met Christina at the hotel, where they would be starting their shifts at the same time.

'There you are' she said to him.

'What do you mean?' he raised his eyebrow. 'You say it like I'm late or something. Or did you just miss me?'

Christina laughed at him, turning away. 'Don't flatter yourself.'

Kevin took his apron from the hook, checking himself in the mirror briefly before getting dressed into his shirt and work trousers, shoving his school bag into his locker.

'So how is Justin?' Christina asked him casually.

'Ugh' Kevin groaned, slamming his locker shut. 'Man, he's still so grouchy.'

'Well you did fuck his.... whatever he-she is, boyfriend, escort, whore. You did fuck him.'

'Yeah thanks for reminding me again.'

She just laughed at him in response.

'I can't take much more of his crap...' Kevin complained, 'he's so moody and.... jeez he's kinda scary too.'

'Well you do owe him' Christina said, tying up her hair and admiring herself in the mirror as she stood beside him.

Kevin watched her with a flat expression as she preened herself, doing so overly dramatically and for a prolonged period of time before turning to him with a giggle.

'I'm ready' she gleamed, before turning away from him and skipping off. 'Come on boy don't just stand there' she sang back to him. 'The customers are waiting.'

Kevin sighed, hanging his head.

He put the apron on quickly and marched out of the locker room towards the restaurant.

Kevin finished his shift hours later and was exhausted after so many days working after school. He headed home, walking the distance, moving slowly through the now eerie and dark town.

He found the building in the quieter more scenic part of town, entered the lift and pressed the button for the highest floor.

He let out a weary sigh, blinking slowly as he waited.

Kevin stepped out of the lift when the doors opened, heading to the apartment at the end of the corridor, he felt a sudden twinge of nervousness inside him as he pressed his hand upon the handle.

Opening the door, he immediately saw Justin sitting on the sofa and reading.

Justin turned very slowly around to look at him, and Kevin felt a sliver of trepidation.

‘Uh...hey’ he smiled. ‘I’m back.’

Justin said nothing as Kevin closed the door, moving across the room and putting down his bag. ‘Just gonna have a shower ok? Ok.’ he finished without waiting for a response from Justin.

He fled into the bathroom, closing the door with a snap and leaning against it.

‘Ugh’ he groaned to himself. ‘What a hassle....’

And then he realised.

‘Oh no I need to get my clothes.....need to face him again.’

With deep reluctance he stepped out of the bathroom, crossing the main room again as he headed to his room to get his clean clothes, before heading back to the bathroom, all the while, Justin was staring at him with an unfriendly expression.

He had a shower quickly, washing and drying his hair before stepping out, seeing Justin still sitting there reading his magazine.

‘Alright’ Kevin said at last, ‘alright.’

Justin turned to him, a strange look in his eye.

‘I know what happened before was my fault, so I am the one who can make it right.’

Justin continued to stare at him, he did not move.

‘I um...’ Kevin began, hunching his shoulders. ‘You can have me’ he said, forcing the words from his mouth. ‘You can...make love to me.’

‘I don’t’ make love’ Justin answered shortly. ‘Love implies tenderness, affection. I don’t care for relationships, nor do I have time for them.’

He approached Kevin then, causing him to tense up then.

‘I only care about raw hard sex’ he spoke in a seductive voice.

Kevin swallowed the lump in his throat, feeling suddenly out of his depths.

‘It’s true that you owe me after what you did’ Justin said to him, ‘but are you willing to give me what I want? Are you willing to give me the only thing that will make it better?’

‘Ah...’ Kevin breathed glancing away. ‘Yes.’

‘Alicia warned you about me’ Justin spoke in a level voice, ‘didn’t he?’

‘...Y-yes’ Kevin said.

‘I’m big’ Justin spoke seriously, ‘and rough. He could handle me, I doubt you can.’

Kevin began to flush then, feeling a little lost, unsure of what to say.

‘If the offer stands’ Justin said, reaching out to caress his face tenderly, ‘I’d really like to fuck you tonight.’

Kevin’s heart beat hard in his chest, so much it began to hurt.

‘Come with me’ Justin said backing away then, turning and walking up the stairs. ‘I want to show you something.’

Kevin breathed a heavy sigh as Justin walked away, bowing his head before glancing up towards Justin again.

He followed him up the stairs.

Justin led him to his bedroom, a large room with a king-size bed. It was dark outside now, the light in the town beyond dim in the cloudy night.

Kevin lingered in the doorway as Justin moved over to a chest of drawers.

He opened the top draw, and Kevin's heart froze in his chest as he saw, one by one, the things that Justin pulled out, placing each one after the other, upon the top.

Whips, ropes, ball-gags, a human-muzzle, handcuffs.

Kevin's heart dropped in his chest.

'We won't use any of these yet' Justin said. 'For now, we'll just do it straight.'

He turned back to Kevin, who lifted his eyes, meeting Justin's

'Are you frightened?' Justin asked him.

'No' Kevin answered quietly.

'You look it.'

Kevin averted his eyes.

'You want to make it up to me' Justin said to him, approaching him. 'You want to let me come inside you, like you let....' He trailed off.

'I didn't mean for that to happen' Kevin whispered, trying to control his nerves. 'But I....'

'Did you like it?' Justin asked him. 'Did you like being penetrated. Did it feel good?'

'Um...' Kevin answered, his voice breaking. 'Yes' he said at last. 'It felt.... good...strange...at first.....I've never.... I....'

'So you liked it?' Justin asked.

'.... Yes.'

'Doing it with me will be very different' Justin said seriously. 'I like it.... hard. I like to....' He balled his fists, 'fuck so hard.....' he turned his heavy eyes back onto Kevin. 'I want to do it with you' he said. 'You have to consent to it, you have to say yes. But once you agree, you cannot back down. If you say yes, I will do what I want with you until I am finished. Do you understand?'

Kevin blinked uncertainly up at him.

'You said that I can have you' Justin told him. 'Know that I like it rough.' He paused. 'I need to know its consensual. I need you to say yes.'

Kevin hunched his shoulders, glancing towards the chest of drawers, where there lay the ropes and others things that Justin had put there.

He glanced towards Justin who stood before him, waiting patiently for his answer.

Kevin drew a deep breath, swallowing the lump in his throat.

'Yes' he spoke, in a loud and clear voice.

Justin bowed his head, blinking slowly.

He moved past Kevin, closing the door, his hand splayed on the wood.

He turned back to him.

'Take your clothes off.'

'Is that it?' Kevin asked. 'You're going to tell me to do everything?'

The edges of Justin's eye twitched then as flicker of anger crossed his expression.

Kevin looked down at his own body, hugging himself, feeling suddenly strange at the thought of being naked in front of Justin.

'It would....' Justin began, 'be difficult to undress you if you are struggling.'

'What?'

‘Just...’ Justin hissed impatiently now, ‘take off your clothes. Everything. I want you completely exposed to me.’

‘Um...ok...’

Kevin did so, undressing quickly. He paused at his trousers, hands upon the waist, before taking those off as well.

Justin watched him as he did this.

‘Ok’ Kevin mumbled, hugging himself, ‘I’ve done it.’

Justin reached out to him, running his finger down Kevin’s chest, almost tenderly, his breath coming in shudders.

‘You have no idea how much I’ve needed this’ he whispered.

‘Hu?’

His hand shot up then, grabbing Kevin by the hair.

‘Ah! What are you-?’

Justin dragged him across the room and threw him down onto the bed, pausing for only a moment before bearing over him.

He cut off Kevin’s nervous whimper with a kiss. He didn’t hesitate to slip his tongue in, tasting as much of him as he could, ignoring Kevin’s tight grasp on his shoulders as he tried to push him back.

Justin released him only for a moment, and Kevin threw his head back with a gasp, breathing heavily to catch his breath.

‘Justin hold on for a minute.’

‘No’ Justin spoke in a sharp and commanding voice. ‘You do not tell me what to do’ he said, taking Kevin’s hand and bringing it to his lips.

He bit him hard.

Kevin moaned in pain, tensing up.

He opened his eyes only when Justin opened his mouth, releasing his bite. Kevin could not see through his tears of pain, the marks in his hand, the indentations.

He looked down then as he heard Justin unzipping himself, seeing Justin’s erection spring free.

*Fuck he’s so big...oh god...*

Justin clapped his hand over Kevin’s mouth, pressing his weight on his jaw painfully.

Justin’s other hand went to between his legs, pushing himself forwards and inside, moving with surety.

Kevin began to shake his head violently, breaking free of Justin’s hold he began to cry out.

‘Get it out it hurts!’

‘No’ Justin growled, grabbing him again with a hand and silencing him. ‘I warned you. You cannot back out now. I cannot stop myself when I have a taste.’ He lifted his body then, arching his back as his other hand wound around Kevin’s thigh. ‘I won’t let you go until I am done.’

He thrust into Kevin hard with all he had, Kevin’s breath was forced out of him and Justin went all the way in.

He thrust again and again, Kevin screaming in pain and clawing at Justin’s chest, begging him to stop.

Justin leant down to kiss him. In desperation Kevin bit him, so hard he caused Justin to bleed.

Justin drew back sharply, pausing only momentarily to wipe the blood from his lip. He smiled then and pushed into Kevin once more. 'Please stop!' Kevin sobbed, pinned to the bed now, Justin's body pressed down upon his. 'Please!'

Justin's hand snaked up the bed then, covering Kevin's mouth once more. He bit into Kevin's neck hard, hand grasping his shoulder as he ran his nails down Kevin's back, clawing him and making him bleed.

Kevin's continued screams were muffled by Justin's hand.

## Chapter Six

### School

Justin ran the water for the bath, filling it nearly to the top with clear warm water, no soap. He reached down to feel the water, adjusting the hot and cold water from the taps before turning them off and straightening.

He glanced around, looking towards the open door, from which he could see the bottom of the stairs.

Justin left the bathroom, walking upstairs slowly and back towards the bedroom. He opened the door.

Kevin lay on the bed utterly still, resting on his side with his back to the door. There were red lines down his back and over his shoulders, bitemarks also, and on the white sheets, were faint smears of blood.

Justin approached him, reaching out to him.

He touched Kevin on the shoulder gently, rolling him onto his back.

'Kevin.....'

Kevin blinked slowly up at him, breathing calmly through his mouth.

Justin reached down to him, sliding his arms beneath his body and lifting him, holding him to his chest. Kevin let out a slight whimper of pain at the movement, his body was very sore and tender.

Kevin carried him downstairs slowly, taking one step at a time.

He carried him to the bathroom, standing beside the bath, he lowered Kevin in.

Kevin flinched as he was lowered, drawing a sharp hiss of pain between his teeth as his body stung.

Pink could be seen suddenly in the water.

Justin moved slowly, allowing Kevin to sit back against the bath. Kevin let out a sigh, resting his head back and closing his eyes.

Justin knelt on the floor beside the bath, watching Kevin closely. For the longest time he did not speak, and Kevin remained utterly silent.

'I didn't mean to take out my frustrations on you so violently' Justin spoke at last. 'It's just.... I've been very...' he let out a sigh. 'I've been very angry without Alicia' he admitted. 'She...was able to satisfy my needs. She was able to handle me.... that's why I was so angry when she left.'

Kevin said nothing, gritting his teeth, he swallowed, before letting out a slow sigh.

Justin rose then, going over to the cupboard and taking a clean flannel. He returned to the bath, kneeling beside Kevin and soaking the flannel in the water. He began to clean Kevin's face tenderly.

Kevin reached out to grab his hand then, stopping him.

'Don't...' he gasped. 'Don't ever do that to me again....'

Justin froze as he watched him, seeing Kevin shudder.

'If I had known you were....' Kevin groaned, hands going to his face. 'How could you do that to me?' he whispered, beginning to cry, tears running down his cheeks.

'I didn't mean to hurt you' Justin replied. 'At least...not at first.'

'You will not touch me again' Kevin breathed. 'You will not touch me again...'

Kevin got out of the bath shortly after, struggling to move. Justin helped him to stand.

Justin left momentarily to get Kevin's clothes. Kevin used the towel to dry himself as best he could, putting the towel between his legs and pulling it away, he saw blood there.

Kevin let out a sigh, feeling miserable.

Justin returned, he knelt before him, helping Kevin put his feet through his pyjama bottoms, Kevin leaning forwards gingerly on Justin for support.

'You should be careful when you move' Justin told him. 'It will take a while for you to recover, you don't want to tear yourself again.'

'Yeah' Kevin scoffed angrily. 'I got it.'

'Where are you going?' Justin asked, rising to his feet as Kevin moved away.

'To my room' Kevin answered shortly.

'Don't you want anything to eat?'

'No' Kevin snapped back, walking out the bathroom and heading back to his own room.

He closed the door with a snap, leaning against the wood and crying quietly into his hands.

After a time, he straightened, moving over to his bed and crawling forwards.

He rested on his front, hugging the sheets to him.

He closed his eyes, and became still, falling asleep quickly.

### *The next day in school*

'Woah, what happened to you?'

Kevin had just crossed the school gates, glancing up to see Christina standing there before him. He had been completely distracted, lost in a world of his own.

'Woah' Christina said again, staring at him more closely this time. 'It must have been something bad.'

Kevin sobbed into his hands suddenly and without warning, shoulders trembling as he covered his face.

'Oh my god Kevin!' she embraced him then, holding him tightly to her.

Kevin drew a shuddering breath, forcing himself to calm.

‘I’m sorry’ Kevin whispered, ‘I’m sorry.’

‘Come with me’ Christina spoke softly, turning and ushering him, moving away from the main path where there were people, and towards a secluded spot away from the main buildings.

She placed her hands upon his shoulders, pushing him down into a sitting position on the bench and seating herself beside him.

She shuffled closer, leaning towards him with her hands together.

‘Go on’ she prompted. ‘Tell me what happened.’

Kevin explained briefly what happened the night before, how he had offered himself to Justin as a sort of debt he felt he owed for causing Alicia to leave, and what had happened after.

‘Oh...’ was all that Christina managed to say. ‘Ah.’

‘I feel so violated’ Kevin whispered, not trusting his voice to speak. ‘I just feel so sore...down there. It felt good when I... when Alicia um...’

‘When Alicia fucked you?’ Christina offered.

‘Yes’ Kevin finished, bowing his head. ‘I didn’t realise...’ he trailed off.

‘Justin did warn you though’ Christina said. ‘He did warn you.’

Kevin gritted his teeth, holding his hands together tightly, shoulders hunched.

‘What do you think I should do?’ he asked her sadly.

‘Go with it.’

‘Are you serious?!’

‘Why not?’ Christina asked. ‘You might decide in time you like it rough.’

Kevin stared at her in disbelief, before running a hand down his face.

‘I can’t believe you sometimes...’

‘Listen’ Christina told him seriously, ‘I believe you should try your best to make the best of whatever situation you’re in. You said you enjoyed it with Alicia, ok.... Justin is a little different, you know that now. Set your boundaries, make it clear to him what you are comfortable with. It may take some time though’ she added as an afterthought. ‘I won’t let anyone penetrate me who’s *that* big. I just use my mouth. Maybe you could do the same.’

‘I’m not gay Christina’ Kevin mumbled to the ground.

‘Bi-curious then.’

He turned to face her, seeing that she was smiling at him.

‘I’m almost jealous of you. I would love a sugar daddy.’

‘It’s not like that’ he answered sourly, glaring back at her. ‘I don’t want anything like that. I’m not a toy to be enjoyed like that.’

‘Why not?’ Christina answered deadly serious. ‘I’m sure he would be happy with the arrangement, he’s already charging you practically nothing for rent.’

‘The deal wasn’t based on sex.’

‘But you offered it, and now he’s had a taste.’

Kevin blinked in confusion then.

‘You say completely the wrong thing sometimes.’

She giggled at him.

‘Well’ she said, ‘if I were you, I would welcome it. But’ she gleamed, ‘I would not let him tear me.’

‘Ugh’ Kevin couldn’t stop himself from saying, his lip curling in a sneer as he tensed suddenly.

‘Consider it’ Christina told him rising, ‘seriously. I mean.... you have to support yourself now, and your family has moved on. If worse comes to worse you can stay with me, but only for a short time, you know I’m not allowed people staying over.’

‘Thanks Christina’ Kevin mumbled.

‘And remember’ she winked at him, wagging a finger at him playfully. ‘You can still have me almost whenever you want.’ She giggled playfully again, turning and walking away. ‘Bye!’ she waved back at him. ‘See you around.’

Kevin raised his head watching her saunter away.

He let out a sigh, grabbing his bag and rising to his feet, he flinched at the pain in his body.

Kevin let out a groan unhappily, stepping forwards towards the school, heading to his first class.

He endured his lessons that day, meeting with his friends outside the school gates afterwards.

‘Hey Kevin there you are, why do you look so down?’

‘Sorry’ Kevin laughed awkwardly, ‘I’m just a little tired. It’s been a long day.’

‘What’s so different about today?’ Stu asked him as they stood there in a small group.

‘I’ve just been busy.’

‘Oh yeah’ Phil said clicking his fingers then, ‘you just got a job, didn’t you? With Christiana yeah? Did she help you get that job?’

‘Yeah’ Kevin spoke flatly. ‘Something like that.’

‘Aw man she’s so hot’ Stu said. ‘You’re so lucky to have her.’

‘What are you talking about?’ Kevin said raising an eyebrow at him and shoving his hands in his pockets. ‘I don’t *have* her.’

‘Isn’t she your girlfriend?’ Phil said.

‘Uh. No?’ Kevin replied disgusted.

‘I thought you fucked her’ Stu replied.

‘Yeah I have’ Kevin replied shortly.

‘Oh, it’s like that’ Phil laughed.

‘Yeah, we’re not going out’ Kevin said flatly. ‘We just fuck sometimes.’

They both laughed at that.

‘Do you think she would sleep with me?’ Stu asked.

‘Maybe if you ask her nicely’ Kevin replied.

‘Really?’

‘No’ Kevin turned to him now, ‘she’s not a whore. We’re like childhood friends. I mean.... we’ve known each other for years. She’s not going to fuck you. Aww too bad. Don’t look so disappointed.’

Kevin turned away then and began to walk.

‘Hey where are you going? Don’t you want to hang out?’ Phil called out to him.

‘Sorry I’m busy.’

‘Come on man!’ Stu said, ‘don’t be like that.’

‘Sorry’ Kevin called back, ‘maybe next time.’

As he was walking away, another figure was watching him. She began to trail him.

‘Oh, hey Anastasia, how are you doing?’

‘Hey Kevin’ Anastasia cooed, hugging her books to her. ‘How are you doing?’

‘I’m good’ he smirked back at her teasingly. ‘What can I do for you?’

‘I was wondering if you wanted to hang out again?’ she asked nervously.

‘Like a date?’ he asked teasingly.

‘Yeah’ she gushed, unable to stop herself.

‘Sorry I’m busy.’

‘Hu?’

‘And anyway, I already told you I’m not ready to commit’ he said.

‘Yeah I know’ she replied sullenly. ‘I just...like being around you that’s all.’

Kevin frowned at her, recognising the repetition of this situation whenever he was around her.

‘I know you do’ Kevin smirked, turning back to her and looking ever so handsome. ‘And I like having you around too.’

‘Oh, you do?’

‘Sure, I do’ he gleamed at her.

‘Oh waw.’

She clutched her hands over her chest then, tensing with excitement before straightening.

‘So where are you going?’ she asked.

‘I was just going home’ Kevin said. ‘I’m feeling a little tired.’ He couldn’t hold back a yawn then.

‘Awww?’ Anastasia said in disappointment. ‘That’s a shame.’

‘Maybe we can hang out some other time’ Kevin offered. ‘I really hope we can.’

‘You do?’ Anastasia said breathlessly.

‘Sure.’

He stopped suddenly, grasping her shoulders firmly then, in a comforting gesture.

‘I’ll see you tomorrow Anastasia’ he said to her.

‘Yeah’ she sighed dreamily. ‘Um...bye...’

He left her then staring after him as he crossed the street. She stopped following him but watched him as he walked away from her without a backwards glance.

Kevin headed through the town walking briskly, heading back towards what he thought in his mind as the fancy part of town, where Justin lived. That tower, those expensive apartments.

He reached the building, walking through the glass doors and across the lobby.

He waited for the lifts, glancing about him and tapping his foot as he did.

Everything was so modern and clean here, and he loved these surroundings, though he did feel a little out of place. Sometimes he still could not believe he was in this position, this strange situation. He could not even now, believe what had happened to him.

Kevin let out a slow breath then, feeling suddenly nervous as he stepped into the lift, pressing the button for the highest floor, waiting.

He scratched his palms, shifting from one foot to the other as he stared at the number above the door as the lift ascended, travelling as high as it would go.

Kevin looked straight ahead again as the lift slowed, stepping out once the doors were open.

He made his way down the corridor, heading to the door at the end and bringing out his key, unlocking the door.

When he stepped in, his heart jumped in his chest, seeing Justin standing in the kitchen watching the door.

He had been waiting for him.

A silence passed between them, and Kevin stood there for a moment with his hand on the door still, before gathering himself.

He turned and closed it.

‘What are you doing?’ he asked the door sullenly, still facing it as he put his bag down on the floor beside. ‘Why are you waiting for me? Its creepy.’

‘I wanted to see you’ Justin said.

‘Why?’

There was no answer, and Kevin turned glaring at Justin then.

For the longest time Justin did not move, and then he stepped around the counter, moving closer to Kevin.

‘Kevin’ he spoke sincerely.

Kevin tensed as he drew closer, stopping directly before him.

Justin looked sombre then, standing over him.

‘What...what is it?’ Kevin asked uncomfortably. ‘What’s your problem?’

‘I wanted to apologise’ Justin said. ‘I didn’t mean to hurt you before. I was...just frustrated.’

‘I told you to stop’ Kevin said flushing slightly, hunching his shoulders uncomfortably.

‘No, you gave me permission specifically remember?’

‘I’m not going to argue with you about this’ Kevin said shortly.

‘Good.’ Justin replied. ‘I just wanted to say I’m sorry. I was frustrated.... without Alicia...’ he clenched his teeth. ‘I should not have taken it out on you.’

‘Fine’ Kevin said shortly.

‘Kevin...’

Kevin’s eyes flashed then as Justin reached for him, hand lifting to Kevin’s face as he moved closer.

‘No!’ Kevin smacked his hand away. ‘You will not touch me!’

Justin stared at Kevin in shock, eyes wide as he stood there frozen.

Justin drew his hand back, swallowing the lump in his throat.

‘There is food for you in the kitchen’ Justin said walking away then. ‘I’m going to my room.’

Kevin watched him sullenly as Justin walked away. He only relaxed when he saw Justin vanish into his own room, and the door close behind him.

Kevin let out a sigh, shoulders slumping now.

He straightened, heading over to the kitchen to see what he could find to eat.

## Chapter Seven

### Toy

Several days passed, and nothing happened that was out of the ordinary.

Kevin hung out with his friends now.

It was the weekend, and Kevin had been active all day. He had woken early and left the apartment as quickly as he could, rushing through the town. He ate breakfast out, visiting Christina in her work.

‘Hey girl’ Kevin grinned at her as she came over him.

‘Oh Kevin’ Christina sighed tiredly.

‘Oh, you look like hell’ he said happily to her.

She frowned at him. ‘Thanks’ she said flatly, taking out her notepad and pen. ‘Now what do you want?’

‘Full breakfast please’ he told her. ‘So are you busy later?’

‘Yes, I’m sorry’ Christina said scribbling on the notepad and putting it back into her pocket quickly. ‘I’m working both jobs today.’

‘You’re free tonight yes?’ Kevin persisted.

‘Yeah’ she replied.

Kevin put his elbows on the table, speaking quietly now.

‘Do you want to fuck tonight?’

‘Not tonight’ Christina sighed. ‘I’m really tired now, and I’m going to be even more tired later.’

‘Have you been sleeping well?’

‘Not recently’ Christina smiled then, trying to stay positive. ‘I’m just kinda stressed right now. You know...work stuff.’

‘Another time then’ Kevin smiled, ‘I hope you’re alright.’

‘Yeah I’m fine’ Christina waved at him. ‘Don’t worry about it. Now is there anything else I can get for you?’

‘Just a coffee. You know how I like it.’

She nodded and walked away.

Kevin watched her go. He always thought that Christina was very beautiful. She always dressed beautifully, wore her makeup beautifully, and had a perfect figure, slender and fine and not too skinny.

Kevin picked up the menu then, distracting himself as he began to read it, before putting it back down and looking through the window. It was a beautiful day. The town was pleasant and bright, the people outside calmly going about their business. Kevin watched the people for a time, before staring up at the clouds, seeing a little sparrow sitting in a branch above. He stared at that for a few moments, thinking about how cute it was, before it flew away.

His trance was broken when Christian returned to him, carrying a tray with his breakfast and coffee on.

‘Here you are.’

‘Thank you so much my little flower’ Kevin teased.

‘Oh, give me a break’ she muttered under her breath. ‘Anything else?’

‘How about a kiss?’ Kevin grinned.

‘Enjoy your meal’ Christina told him sarcastically, before heading quickly back to the kitchen.

Kevin’s eyes lingered on her for a moment, before turning down to his food.

He was happy eating here now and took his time with his breakfast.

When he was done he paid, leaving without saying goodbye to Christina. She was busy with other customers, and didn't want to bother her, and so he left, making his way through the town to meet his friends.

Kevin met a group of his friends at the skatepark. They greeted him, and the small group hung out together for the rest of that day. They moved through the town, heading to the shops at midday for something to eat, visiting the arcade, going to the beach, going over one of their houses briefly because he forgot his phone.

Now they hung out outside some shops, around some benches near some railings.

Kevin looked to the sky then, heart sinking in his chest.

'Ok guys I gotta go now.'

'Aw won't you stay?' one of his friends said.

'Sorry but got school tomorrow, and work after school. I don't want to wear myself out' Kevin said straightening.

'Man, you're no fun sometimes' his friend complained.

'Yeah?' Kevin frowned at him. 'You get a job and then tell me what it's like.'

Kevin said goodbye to his friends and left them, heading back to the place where he lived, though he could hardly call it home, not even in his mind.

He made his way across the town along the now familiar route, heading towards the large building, the apartment complex.

He went up in the lift, getting off at the top floor and making his way to the door at the end of the hallway.

He got out his keys to unlock the door.

Kevin blinked then, jiggling the key in the lock.

'It's not working?'

The door suddenly opened then and Kevin baulked, seeing Justin standing in the doorway and smiling.

'Hello' Justin grinned, and Kevin was immediately suspicious.

'Um...yeah' Kevin said, reaching forwards and taking the key back out of the lock. 'The door wouldn't open' Kevin told him.

'Yeah, I know, I locked it from the inside.'

'Um...why?'

'I have a surprise for you' Justin grinned again, 'close your eyes.'

'Are you kidding me?'

'Just do it' Justin ordered, his expression turning serious.

Kevin felt a little nervous suddenly, a little uncertain in front of Justin.

He closed his eyes, feeling his heart skipping in his chest.

Justin reached out to take him by the arm gently, pulling him inside the apartment and closing the door behind him.

Justin led Kevin towards the centre of the apartment, slowing to a stop then and standing beside him.

'Ok' he said, 'you can open your eyes.'

Kevin opened his eyes.

'What? What the hell?!'

Beside him Justin smiled.

‘What the hell is this?’ Kevin asked, turning to face Justin.

Justin looked back at Kevin, a teasing smile playing about his lips.

‘It’s a present’ Justin explained, ‘my gift to you.’

Kevin stared at Justin hard, narrowing his eyes slightly, trying to gauge if he was serious or not. But Justin was deadly serious.

Kevin looked away from Justin then, and back towards the ‘present’.

The man was young, less than twenty in age. He was slender and slight of frame. His hair was spiked and dyed deep blue, and his ears...

Kevin stepped forwards, reaching out to brush the man’s hair back.

The young man’s ears were pointed like an elf’s.

‘Surgery?’ Kevin mumbled.

Justin raised his eyes to Kevin.

The young man was tied to the chair he sat on. His wrists were tied together and bound to the chair above his head. His legs were tied to the arms of the chair, the cord wound around his ankles. He was blindfolded, and there was a gag around his mouth.

‘I don’t understand’ Kevin mumbled.

‘He is my gift’ Justin reiterated, ‘from me to you.’

Kevin turned back to Justin.

‘I want you to fuck him’ Justin said. ‘I want to watch you fuck him.’

Kevin stared at Justin for the longest time, for ages he did not speak.

He looked at the young man again, staring at him intently.

‘Is that what you want?’ he said to the man. ‘Do you want me to do this to you?’

The young man swallowed, unable to speak behind the gag, he gave a single nod of his head.

Kevin hesitated for a moment, before reaching out to him.

He touched the gag around the man’s mouth, reaching forwards and untying.

The young man opened his mouth as the gag was taken away, breathing a slow and deep breath.

He fell still again, mouth slightly open as Kevin stared down at him unmoving.

Kevin reached forwards again at last, caressing the man’s cheek briefly.

The man did not move, did not resist, did not react at all, but continued to breathe slowly, waiting for whatever was to happen.

Kevin dropped the gag he held, before leaning forwards and kissing the man.

The nameless man tied to the chair kissed Kevin back passionately, slipping his tongue far into Kevin’s mouth, tasting as much of Kevin as he could, clearly wanting more.

Kevin blinked slowly, the man’s eyes still hidden by the blindfold.

Kevin pulled back then, straightening up and tugging the bow that tied the man’s wrists to the chair, though still keeping his wrists bound together. He knelt briefly, untying the cord that held the man’s ankles to the arms of the chair.

Kevin pulled the man up then, with the slightest of tugs, the man placed his feet on the floor, rising to a stand. He allowed himself to be walked a few steps across the room and towards the sofa.

Kevin pushed him back against it, the man’s head back against the armrest. Kevin bore over him as the nameless man spread his legs further apart.

Justin moved across the room, sitting a short distance away in a single sofa chair facing them. He leant back, leaning an elbow upon the armrest, and touching his hand to his face as he watched, his foot raised and resting across his knee. He watched.

Kevin pinned the man's hands above his head, holding them there as he kissed him. The man let out a small moan as they touched, Kevin's other hand moving slowly down the man's body.

He tensed suddenly as Kevin's wandering hand came between his legs, caressing him there. He felt the man beneath him was already beginning to get hard, and he moved his hand away for a moment, slipping it this time into the man's trousers, and touching his naked skin.

The man's breathing changed suddenly as he began to gasp and moan, his body beginning to tremble, head bowed now and teeth gritted.

*He really does want this* Kevin realised, watching the man. *Ok...fine.... I'll do this, if that's what he wants...*

Kevin glanced to the side then towards Justin, who sat passively watching the both of them without reaction, his expression level and eyes calm.

Kevin's attention lingered on Justin a moment longer, before he looked away again, and back down to the man beneath him.

Kevin moved off him then, straightening the man's legs together and unzipping his trousers.

The man threw his head back as Kevin pulled his trousers off, throwing them to the floor beside the sofa, exposing the man, completely naked from the waist down.

Kevin hesitated for a moment, feeling a twinge of uncertainty and confusion inside him, and a little bit of nervousness.

The man lay there beneath him, not resisting, arms still above his head, wrists tied together. He parted his legs then without being prompted, opening himself for Kevin.

A sudden urge rose inside Kevin then, lust. He realised suddenly that he wanted him, he wanted to feel the pleasure. He wanted this man.

Kevin bore over the man again, kissing him yet again, as he moved his hand around the man's naked thigh, slipping his fingers into him.

'Yeah' the man moaned, speaking for the first time, *'I want more...'*

Kevin leant back, unzipping his own trousers. He leant back on his heels then, rubbing the end of himself for a few moments, before leaning forwards again, grabbing the man around the thigh and lifting his leg.

The man let out a slow gasp, as Kevin slowly pushed himself in, grimacing with the effort.

He continued to push, until he was all the way in, bearing over the man beneath him, resting on his elbow, his other hand lifting the man's leg up.

Kevin pulled back slightly, before pushing forwards again, again and again, his rhythm fast and hard.

It felt so good. The man beneath him (whoever he was) was a tight fit.

Kevin gritted his teeth, brow furrowed in concentration as he thrust repeatedly, the effort and the pleasure began to build, and his grip on the man's thigh began to tighten. He gripped the man by the hair suddenly with his other hand, pushing into him hard as the man continued to moan in pleasure, Justin looked silently on.

Kevin came at last, gritting his teeth and letting out a groan, the man beneath him began to whimper, gasping, cheeks flushed.

Kevin let out a breath, body relaxed.  
He pulled out of him.

‘Hello, it’s nice to meet you! My name is Toy.’

Kevin blinked uncertainly at the man, eyebrow raised in confusion.

‘...Toy?’

‘Yes’ the young man gleamed.

‘What’s your real name?’

‘No real name’ the man replied, ‘just Toy.’

Kevin glanced towards Justin uncertainly.

‘I’ve explained the situation to Toy’ Justin informed Kevin. ‘He knows everything.’

‘I sure do’ Toy gleamed, approaching Kevin and taking both his hands in his. ‘I look forward to being with you as you want. I am your present after all, your Toy.’

‘And you are ok with this?’ Kevin asked uncertainly, glancing down at his own hands within Toy’s, before looking up at Toy again.

‘Of course,’ Toy gleamed happily. ‘I am here for your pleasure, I want you to use me as you please.’

‘Um...okay?’

‘You were really good to me earlier’ Toy said to him, his hand weaving around the back of Kevin’s neck, sliding closer towards him and resting his forehead against Kevin’s. ‘You felt so good’ Toy repeated, ‘I hope...that we could do it again....’

‘Uh...yeah sure why not?’ Kevin said, slightly flushed.

‘And you’ Toy said, letting go of Kevin who drew back quickly, and turning towards Justin.

‘Am I for your use too?’

‘Maybe later’ Justin waved away dismissively.

‘Where um...where did you find this guy?’ Kevin asked Justin.

‘From the internet’ Justin replied simply, crossing his arms and glancing towards Toy, ‘where you can find pretty much anything.’

Toy swayed on the spot then, hugging himself and looking to the ground.

‘I hope I am good enough for the job’ Toy said.

‘You’ve done very well so far’ Justin told him, and Toy placed his hand together before him, smiling happily. ‘Toy will be living here from now on’ Justin said, speaking to Kevin. ‘He will be sleeping in either your bed, or mine, depending on who wants him.’

Kevin gritted his teeth together, flushing brightly at that.

‘Stop talking about it like that’ he told Justin shortly.

‘Don’t be prudish’ Justin told Kevin shortly. ‘Now if you are ok with it’ he said speaking to Toy, ‘I want you stay in my bed tonight.’

‘Of course,’ Toy said gleaming at Justin excitedly, ‘anything my master commands.’

‘Master?’ Kevin echoed.

‘Yes’ Toy smiled warmly turning to him. ‘You are both my master.’

‘Ah’ Kevin laughed awkwardly, scratching the back of his head. ‘Ok...’

‘Problem?’ Justin asked him shortly.

‘No no’ Kevin said casually, staring at the wall to the side. ‘This isn’t a weird arrangement at all.’

‘Good’ Justin said turning away from him. ‘You can cook anytime’ he said to Toy.

‘Cook?’ Kevin questioned.

‘He’s not just a sex object’ Justin told Kevin, as Toy skipped towards the kitchen, arms out playfully as he went. ‘Toy is to do all the cooking and cleaning around here, as well as pleasing us both physically.’

Kevin hunched his shoulders uncertainly, looking away.

‘Problem?’ Justin asked again.

‘It’s just...’ Kevin mumbled, ‘is this fair on him? I mean...why would he do this?’

‘Oh, don’t worry’ Toy grinned leaning forwards on the kitchen counter, waving a pan in his hand. ‘Justin is paying me a fortune for my services.... plus, I get to suck his big fat cock.’

Kevin spluttered then in horror at what he said.

Toy only winked seductively back at him.

‘I understand that Justin is quite big down there’ Toy spoke playfully, eyes bright, crinkled at the edges playfully. ‘I look forward to seeing him like that.’

Kevin could only stare, looking on in disbelief.

*I guess he really does want this* he thought to himself.

‘I thought you were short on money’ Kevin said to Justin, ‘that’s why you wanted a tenant in the first place.’

‘Things change’ Justin shrugged carelessly. ‘And anyway, you don’t need to concern yourself with my financial situation.’

Kevin averted his eyes then, body tense and lips pursed.

*This guy’s so weird, this arrangement is weird.....how did I even get in this situation?*

*A few days later*

Kevin waited on the street corner, leaning back against the lamppost, one hand in his pocket as he texted on his mobile.

‘Hey Kevin!’

Kevin glanced up, smiling as he saw Anastasia jogging towards him. She looked ravishing, her frame very slender, like a super model.

‘Hey Anastasia’ Kevin grinned, straightening and putting his phone away.

‘I hope I didn’t keep you waiting’ Anastasia said.

‘No, its fine’ Kevin waved her away. ‘So where do you want to go?’

‘Let’s go get some coffee’ Anastasia gushed. ‘I mean...if that’s alright with you. If you don’t mind....’

‘Sure’ Kevin grinned at her, ‘I love coffee.’

‘Cool’ Anastasia gleamed, ‘I’m so happy.’

‘Let’s go’ Kevin said, offering her arm for her to take.

‘Oh!’ Anastasia gleamed. ‘Kevin you’re such a gentleman.’

‘I’m not really’ Kevin said dismissively, ‘I’m just being me.’

They walked through the town together.

‘We look like a couple, don’t we?’ Anastasia grinned blushing slightly and dipping her head. *She would say that wouldn’t she?* Kevin thought in his head.

‘Yeah we do’ Kevin agreed. ‘I like hanging out with you, but I’m not looking for a relationship.’

‘Yeah I know’ Anastasia sighed, trying to hide her negative feelings. ‘But I just like hanging out with you, I’m just happier by your side.’ She mumbled this last part as she said this, avoiding his eyes.

‘Yeah I like being with you too’ Kevin grinned at her. ‘You’re such a good friend.’

‘Yeah’ Anastasia mumbled. ‘Thanks.’

They approached a small crowd as they made their way.

‘What’s going on here?’ Anastasia voiced with curiosity.

Kevin stared into the crowd that was gathered at the front of the building they were approaching.

Kevin furrowed his brow. ‘Is that Justin?’ he spoke aloud to himself.

‘Justin?’ Anastasia echoed. ‘Wait, the model?!’

‘Yeah’ Kevin said. ‘This is the first time I’ve seen him out and about.’

Anastasia looked away again, towards Justin.

‘He’s so pretty’ she breathed.

Kevin glanced at her in surprised then, eyes wide. He smiled to himself then knowingly, greatly amused by what she had just said.

*Oh Anastasia.... you have no idea....*

‘Do you have a crush on him?’ Kevin teased.

‘What?’ Anastasia gasped. ‘No!’

‘Oh, come on. You can tell me the truth’ Kevin said.

‘Well...’ Anastasia kicked her feet shyly as her attention drifted back towards Justin, seeing him one last time before the model disappeared into the building.

*He must have a photo shoot or something Kevin thought vaguely.*

‘I do kinda have a crush on him’ Anastasia admitted reluctantly. ‘But who doesn’t?’ she added hastily. ‘I mean all the girls like him. He’s just so beautiful...like an angel.’

She flushed slightly then, eager to change the subject.

‘I...I heard that you live in the same building as him’ Anastasia blurted then. ‘A couple of people have said...you know...’

Kevin raised his eyebrow at her.

‘I moved out of my parents home recently’ he answered simply.

‘To such an expensive part of town?’

Kevin shrugged silently without giving an answer.

‘I’m just renting a room with a guy’ he told her in a mumble. ‘I’m very lucky to have found a place to live. You might now know but my parents moved away due to work reasons, and I’m kinda on my own now. I mean I have to fend for myself. That’s why I got a job. I don’t want to depend on my parents anymore. I’m not even their child. I was adopted. I guess that’s why I feel worse for scrounging off them.’

‘Oh, you’re not scrounging off them’ Anastasia said hastily.

‘I am really’ Kevin smiled. ‘It’s ok. I just...I understand and I know what you’re going to say. But I was still scrounging off them, even though I didn’t mean to. I just...really wanted to move out and look after myself.’

‘So you rent a room with someone in an expensive part of town?’

‘Yeah, it’s kinda a weird arrangement.’

‘And you pay him rent?’

*I stopped paying rent ages ago. I let him fuck me instead.*

‘Yeah I pay him rent’ Kevin smiled. ‘Now let’s go, I want to get out of here, it’s too crowded.’

They moved on, continuing on their way.

They came to the coffee shop and found a table and Kevin ordered.

With their drinks before them, they began to talk.

Kevin grew tired after a time, changing subject deliberately to make a point. He talked for a long time about Lisa, his childhood friend and sweetheart. He talked about the time he had spent with her and his family, how much she meant to his own family, the last time they had met and how they parted.

He could tell it clearly annoyed Anastasia, though she tried not show it. Kevin could read the signs, they were subtle, but he noticed them.

‘I miss my family most of all’ Kevin said. ‘I have not heard from them in ages, not since they left.’

‘You haven’t messaged them?’ Anastasia asked in surprise. ‘Don’t you have their number?’

‘Of course I do’ Kevin replied, ‘but I can’t explain it. I love them but.... I just.... don’t need them right now....’

They parted hours later, spending most of the day together. Anastasia had had a good time, and Kevin enjoyed himself too.

‘See you around then Ana.’

Anastasia flushed at this, Kevin shortening her name like this caught her off guard.

‘Well...’ Anastasia smiled back, holding her hands behind her back and beaming at him, ‘I’ll see you around then, I hope we can do this again soon.’

‘Yeah’ Kevin grinned back. ‘Me too.’

## Chapter Eight

### A New Game

‘You don’t need to stand so close to me’ Kevin said uncomfortably to Toy.

‘I’m not sorry’ Toy replied with amusement, stepping back slightly. ‘You just smell of perfume. Have you been with a woman today?’

‘Yeah’ Kevin replied. ‘It was kind of a date but we’re just friends.’

‘Oooohhh’ Toy purred, eyes bright then. ‘How fun. Have you made love to her?’

‘Nah.’

‘Good’ Toy grinned. ‘Not that it matters that much. I just...don’t like girls myself...haha. I don’t like vagina...’

‘Ok’ Kevin spoke loudly then to stop him from continuing. ‘So, you’re cooking now?’ Kevin said hastily changing the subject.

‘I sure am’ Toy gleamed moving away from him then, gliding backwards towards the kitchen. ‘You can have me if you want by the way’ Toy added.

‘You like to cook then?’ Kevin said to him, watching Toy move about the kitchen.

‘Oh yes, I love it very much’ Toy gleamed, waving the spatula at him. ‘It’s such a wonderful hobby’ he continued. ‘To live a healthy life all comes down to what you eat’ Toy said to him.

‘Oh, did you know, what you eat effects how your cum tastes?’

‘.....okaaaay?’

‘I once was with a man who ate a lot of mango’ Toy giggled at Kevin excitedly, bouncing on the spot. ‘His cum tasted so *sweet!*’

‘Riiiiight’ Kevin spoke slowly.

Toy turned the stove off, turning towards Kevin.

‘You can have me if you want’ Toy said again to Kevin casually. ‘You know.... if you’re feeling *horny*’ he said nudging Kevin playfully with his shoulder. He giggled, taking the pot off the stove and moving across the kitchen.

Kevin glanced sideways towards Toy as he placed the pot on a rack.

‘Wait’ Kevin spoke clearly.

‘Hm?’ Toy glanced up curiously.

Kevin bowed his head, shoulders hunched and staring at the floor.

‘What’s wrong?’ Toy beamed at him, taking his gloves off and moving closer towards Kevin.

‘Do you want something?’

‘You’ Kevin mumbled. ‘I want you...’

A silence passed. Toy gave a slow gasp then, eyes sparkling and hands balled over his chest.

‘Really?! Oh yes please!’

Kevin raised his head then, looking towards Toy who was smiling back at him.

‘You want to fuck me?’ Toy tilted his head playfully. ‘Is that what you want?’

Kevin stepped towards him and grabbed him without warning, shoving him forwards onto the table.

‘Oh yeah fuck me daddy!’ Toy instantly cried out.

Kevin gritted his teeth, brow furrowed as he held Toy down onto the table, Toy resting on his front, head turned to the side.

Kevin reached around, slipping his hand into Toy’s jeans and further. Toy began to moan as Kevin touched him.

‘Oh yeah’ Toy groaned. ‘*Give me more...I want more...*’

Kevin’s hands went to Toy’s jeans, unzipping him and pulling them down.

Toy drew a sharp intake of breath as Kevin slipped his finger in, his other hand going to his own trousers.

Kevin shoved Toy back onto the table again as Toy tried to straighten, pressing his hand splayed against his back.

‘Don’t move’ he ordered Toy.

Toy let out a gasp as Kevin began to push himself into him, moaning loudly as Kevin began to thrust inside of him.

He gripped Toy by the arms as he fucked him over the table, his movements forceful, before pulling out quickly and pulling Toy into a standing position, turning him around sharply.

‘Take your trousers off’ Kevin ordered, and Toy did so.

Kevin pushed him back onto the table, Toy on his back this time. He lifted Toy’s legs over his shoulders, pushing into him and thrusting hard. Toy threw his head back, his expression that of intense pleasure as he grasped the edge of the table with shaking hands.

Kevin spat on his own hand before grabbing Toy around the cock, he was already hard. He worked jerking his hand back and forth until Toy came, continuing to thrust inside of him.

He let go of Toy then, hand covered as Toy began to sob.

‘Oh yes master’ he begged. ‘Please cum inside me!’

Kevin grasped him again then, both hands around his thigh as he continued to thrust faster, one last time until he stopped suddenly, groaning and gripping Toy’s thigh tightly with nails digging into his flesh.

He relaxed his grip on Toy, allowing his leg to slid off his shoulder as he let out a deep sigh.

‘Oh yeah’ Toy groaned, his voice hushed. ‘That felt so good.’

The front door to the apartment opened suddenly, and both looked up to see Justin standing there.

‘Oh hey’ Justin said casually, closing the door behind him. ‘How you doing?’

‘Welcome home master!’ Toy gleamed staring up at him, still with Kevin inside him.

Kevin said nothing as Justin moved across the room, he flushed slightly bowing his head, pulling out of Toy quickly and turning away.

Toy moaned loudly as he did this, hand going to his own chest where he began to wipe the front of his own shirt.

It was sticky.

‘Have you finished cooking?’ Justin asked Toy casually.

‘Yes’ Toy replied, sitting up and reaching down for his jeans.

‘Then go up to my room. Food can wait for a short time.’

‘Oh’ Toy mumbled, ‘oh ok’ he finished with a smile. ‘Kevin. I’ll be down again later.’

‘Um.... ok’ Kevin mumbled uncomfortably glancing away. ‘Have fun’ he added flatly.

Toy winked at him playfully, turning and heading upstairs. He walked ahead of Justin who followed after him, lingering at the bottom of the stairs for a moment, glancing towards Kevin before following after Toy.

Kevin let out a heavy breath, heart pounding in his chest.

He walked across the room, moving to sit on the sofa. He leant back against it, breathing slowly.

He heard the door to the bedroom upstairs close, glancing around towards it before looking ahead again, bowing his head to his lap.

It wasn’t long before he heard Toy’s moans.

Justin bit into Toy’s shoulder hard, Toy rasping as he held onto Justin, Justin’s arms wrapped around his smaller frame.

Justin shoved Toy back onto the bed, stepping back briefly and taking his own clothes off quickly. He bore over Toy, kissing him passionately, his tongue reaching into him, tasting him, savouring him.

Beneath him, Toy lay on his side as Justin knelt over him, resting on his elbows.

Justin grabbed Toy around the thigh then, lifting his leg up and pushing himself in. He was already hard.

Toy moaned loudly, grasping onto the pillow tightly and gritting his teeth as Justin thrust into him forcefully. Toy resting on his side, Justin sat on one of his legs as he fucked him, holding his other leg which rested over his shoulder.

Beneath him, Toy continued to gasp and moan, as Justin had his way with him.

Shortly after, Kevin and Justin ate their meal together.

‘So, um....’ Kevin began, a little hesitant to ask, ‘where is Toy?’

‘He’s resting’ Justin answered simply, looking down at his plate. ‘Oh, and uh.... you probably shouldn’t use him for a few days.....just saying. He needs to um.... recover.....yeah.’

Kevin swallowed the lump in his throat, staring intently down at his food, and thinking in his mind.

*Aaaaaaaaaaaaaawkwaaaaaaaaard.....*

He knew exactly what had happened, and exactly how Toy was feeling.

‘I hope he’ll be ok’ Kevin mumbled.

Justin glanced up mutely.

*Three days later*

‘Would you like me to suck your cock?’

‘I’m actually doing work right now’ Kevin replied, sitting on the sofa with his books on his lap.

‘Oh please’ Toy begged, balling his fists over his crotch and hunching his shoulders. ‘I really want someone to fuck me so bad, but Justin is out.’

‘I thought he was uh.... haha.... how do I phrase this?’ Kevin mumbled awkwardly.

‘Massive?’ Toy offered. ‘Yeah he is. Oh god he was rough, really tore me up down there, but I’m building up to it, I can take it now. And waw he fucks so hard’ Toy laughed, scratching the back of his head.

Kevin who had been listening to him had gone redder with every word that came out of Toy’s mouth.

‘I just really want you to fuck me as hard as you can’ Toy whined. ‘I need a good seeing to...please...?’

‘Are you really like this?’ Kevin asked sincerely. ‘I find it hard to believe someone enjoys this and craves it as much as you do.’

‘I really do’ Toy insisted. ‘It’s true that Justin’s paying me a lot for my services, but he chose me because of my needs. I need to be fucked. I love being used.’ He tensed then, becoming suddenly excited. ‘Can you come in my face?’

‘What?’

‘M-maybe you can...uh.... whip me...or.... gag me...’

‘Uuuuuuhh...’ Kevin frowned. ‘No. I couldn’t bring myself to hurt people like that. You should go talk to Justin for that.’

‘Can you fuck me?’

‘I’m a little busy.’

‘Then can I blow you?’

Kevin frowned then in annoyance, glancing up at Toy.

He let out a sigh.

‘Oh fine’ he relented.

A slow smile spread across Toy’s face, and he leant forwards then, hands resting upon the back of the sofa as he kissed him, Kevin opening his mouth and allowing him to slip his tongue in.

‘Mmmmm’ Toy moaned in pleasure, before backing off again, and kneeling before Kevin.

He lifted Kevin’s shirt, kissing his stomach, running his tongue along his skin.

Kevin blinked slowly, letting out a sigh before closing his eyes. It felt good.

Toy’s hand went to Kevin’s crotch then, caressing him between the legs for a few moments before unzipping him.

Toy salivated heavily as he licked him, Kevin’s blood rushing down his body as he began to swell.

Toy began to work his way up and down, head bobbing as he sucked him hard.

‘Easy’ Kevin said then, flinching.

‘You don’t like it?’ Toy asked with a teasing smile, nuzzling into it as he stroked his fingers delicately up his shaft. ‘Justin likes it when I blow him hard.’

Toy flinched back uncertainly as Kevin suddenly grabbed him by the hair, shoving him back and throwing him against the sofa, forcing him to the side so that he rested now with his head upon the arm of the sofa.

‘Aw yeah...’ Toy moaned as Kevin sat upon his chest. ‘Choke me daddy. Fuck me hard. Spill your hot cum down my throat.’

‘*Be quiet*’ Kevin hissed, grabbing him by the hair before forcing himself in, shoving his dick into his mouth. ‘I didn’t say you could speak’ Kevin growled, thrusting again and again.

Beneath him he felt Toy gag, but he didn’t stop.

He fucked him hard, he had never done anything quite like this, and was surprised at how good it felt. *She* would never let him be rough with her like this.

He came a good while later, managing to hold off for a long time, until he could no longer hold himself.

He thrust into Toy’s mouth one last time, Toy letting out a desperate moan and coughing as the cum slipped down his throat.

Toy tried to pull away but Kevin grabbed him then by the hair, pushing his hips forwards and shoving his cock back down Toy’s throat.

Toy grabbed Kevin's thighs, trying to push him back, holding his breath, but Kevin held him there with his mouth over him for a moment longer, before releasing his grip.

Toy threw his head back, coughing violently, before tilting his head down, spitting Kevin's cum on his chest.

Toy let out a sigh, swallowing the rest before leaning his head back again, resting back against the arm of the sofa with his cheeks flushed, pulling his sleeve over his hand and wiping his chest clean.

'Did you like that?' Kevin asked him quietly.

Toy's lips tweaked in a smile as he looked back up at Kevin, meeting his eyes.

'Yes' he breathed, exhausted, '.... master...'

Kevin smirked down at him before looking to himself, zipping himself back up and getting off Toy.

'Justin should be home soon' Kevin said to him. 'If you want to be penetrated then ask him when he gets back.'

'Yes master' Toy smiled at him, speaking weakly.

'I've got to go now.'

'Where are you going?'

'I'm meeting my friend' Kevin told him, reaching for the book he had been reading before and putting it away tidily. 'I don't know when I will be back.'

'Dinner will be ready when you get back' Toy said to him, sitting up on the sofa and crossing his legs happily. 'I look forward to your return.'

Kevin hurried through the streets, heading towards the building where Christina worked, the restaurant-hotel.

He found her outside the building, in the alley at the back.

She was sitting on the floor, crying into her hands.

'Hey' Kevin spoke softly to her, approaching her.

She glanced up with an expression of surprise.

'Kevin...I didn't expect to see you here.'

'What's wrong?'

'Ha' Christina laughed, wiping at her eyes. 'I hate it when you see me like this.'

'Lucky it's not too often.'

Christina rose to her feet, dusting herself off.

'I keep it secret from the others' Christina said to him. 'I don't like to make a big deal out of things.'

'I know.'

'This guy' Christina said taking out her phone, 'he's been harassing me for ages.'

Kevin took the phone she offered him, scrolling through the messages.

'Wow' he said flatly. 'He's been stalking you for a while now' he said continuing to read through the texts. 'Have you slept with him?'

'No' Christina said shaking her head. 'I would never...not with him...'

'Wow' Kevin said again continuing to read. 'He said he's going to kill you.'

'Yeah' Christina sighed. 'I've had trouble before, I've been roughed up before.... but this guy.... I'm really scared.'

Kevin frowned, handing the phone back to her.

‘I want to help’ he said. ‘You know there’s nothing I wouldn’t do for you.’

‘I know.’

‘What can I do to help?’

Christian let out a sigh.

‘I don’t know, I need to think about this. I can’t move. My jobs...my home’ she let out a sigh again.

‘Does he know where you live?’

‘Yeah....’

Kevin glanced to the side, his eyes half-open.

‘How big is he?’

Christina looked back at Kevin.

‘You have a chance’ she breathed. ‘If you wanted to go head to head.’

‘Hmm.’

‘He’s not going to back down though’ Christina warned him.

‘I guess not’ Kevin said. ‘At least he’s not a coward.’

‘Kevin....’ Christina swallowed the lump in her throat. ‘I’m scared.’

Kevin reached out to her, putting his hand upon her head then. ‘I would travel to the ends of the earth for you Christina’ he told her. ‘You know you are my dearest friend. Don’t worry, I will make this better.’

She sniffed, wiping at her eyes before straightening up and giving him a confident smile.

‘That’s better’ Kevin said to her. ‘Now, where is he?’

‘Where?’ Christina said. ‘Now? I don’t know.’

He reached out to her, taking her hand in his own.

‘I’ll walk you home, maybe we will meet him on the way.’

Christina ran her fingers through her hair, taking a deep breath and allowing herself to be led away.

She began to calm somewhat as they made their way onwards, heading to her apartment home with her hand in his, Kevin felt her slowly beginning to relax.

‘How was work?’

‘Same old’ Christina mumbled back shrugging. ‘I just feel so tired, I really didn’t want to be harassed like this, especially not now.’

‘There’s never a good time to be harassed and stalked and threatened’ Kevin said to her, walking and holding her hand still. ‘Some guys are just messed up.’ He paused then, glancing towards her. ‘Has he tried to touch you?’

Christina smiled awkwardly then. ‘We’ve not had sex...I mean...he’s not uh...raped me or anything.’

‘You don’t need to say anymore’ Kevin said facing ahead again. ‘Lets just get you home...and remember’ he said looking back to her with a smile, ‘you can call me any time in the day or night if you want, just to talk or if you feel threatened. Just call me ok? I will come.’

‘I know you will Kevin’ Christina said hugging his arm now, ‘thanks.’

They reached her home, approaching the block of apartments and making their way up the concrete steps to her floor.

And there he was, standing before her door waiting for her.  
The guy looked alarmed and a little annoyed to see Kevin standing there with Christina.  
‘Can I help you buddy?’ Kevin spoke harshly, his tone confrontational. ‘Why are you in front of Christina’s door?’  
The guy hesitated, glancing down at their hands they held together, before looking back up at Kevin, sparing a glance only briefly towards Christina.  
‘Who are you?’ the guy asked.  
‘I’m Christina’s boyfriend. Who the fuck are you?’  
The guy hesitated then, gritting his teeth.  
‘I’ve heard you’ve been giving her some trouble’ Kevin said, letting go of Christina’s hand.  
‘And I don’t like it. If I ever hear of you giving her a hard time again, I’ll fucking kill you. You’d better delete her number off your phone, because if you send her one more text, I will find you.’  
The guy glared at Kevin with hate in his eyes, and without another word, he turned and stalked away.  
Kevin let out a sigh, shoulders slumped.  
‘Guess he didn’t want to fight me.’  
‘Would you really have fought him?’ Christina asked.  
‘Of course,’ Kevin replied simply. ‘No one messes with my girlfriend and gets away with it.’ Christina chuckled at that.  
‘Well thanks anyway’ she said moving towards her door and taking out her keys. ‘Would you like to come in?’  
‘I’m kinda busy actually’ Kevin replied. ‘I’m meeting some friends.’  
‘Are you sure?’ Christina said. ‘Are you sure you don’t want to.... fuck me...’ she said quietly. ‘Just a quickie? We *are* going out after all.’  
Kevin grinned with amusement.  
‘Ok fine’ Kevin sighed, stepping forwards.  
‘I mean...if its not too much trouble for you’ Christina added.  
‘Just let me in’ Kevin spoke in a monotone, standing close behind her.  
Christina grinned at him, unlocking the door.  
She and Kevin both stepped inside, Kevin closed the door behind them.

Shortly after that, Kevin returned to Justin’s apartment.  
‘Welcome home’ Toy gleamed at him, the moment he entered.  
Toy stood in the kitchen wearing an apron and kitchen gloves on his hands.  
‘How are you doing?’ Toy asked.  
‘Fine I guess’ Kevin sighed wearily.  
‘Do you have energy to fuck me tonight?’ Toy asked him.  
‘What’s for dinner?’ Kevin asked. ‘It smells good.’  
‘Lasagne’ Toy replied merrily. ‘So do you have the energy to fuck me tonight?’  
Kevin glanced up towards the top of the stairs then, seeing Justin appear from his room.

‘We’re going to try something a bit different after dinner’ Justin said, walking slowly down the stairs, not taking his eyes off Kevin as he spoke. ‘After we’ve had time to rest and digest’ he said, ‘after we’ve all washed...I want us to do something different.’

‘What’ Kevin asked uncertainly, ‘what do you want us to do?’

Justin reached the bottom of the stairs, watching Kevin with a smile now. ‘We’re going to both fuck Toy together.’

‘Hu?’

‘That’s right’ Toy gleamed excitedly. ‘You’re both going to get to fuck me at the same time. *I’m so excited.* I want to you use me as you please, fuck me hard, come inside me, on my chest and in my face and oh so many things.’

‘.....okay?’ Kevin raised an eyebrow, glancing over towards Justin. But Justin was watching Toy now.

‘I can barely contain myself’ Justin said, gliding over towards Toy in the kitchen then, shoving him forwards onto the counter suddenly.

‘Not yet master’ Toy gleamed looking back at him. ‘It’s not time yet.’

Justin gave a predatory smile, caressing Toy between the legs for a moment, before releasing him.

‘Fine’ he said backing away. ‘Not yet.’

‘So, is dinner nearly ready?’ Kevin asked the wall.

‘Please sit down’ Toy smiled happily, indicating the table which was already set. ‘It’ll be just a few more minutes.’

Kevin sat in his place, the same chair he always sat at. Justin was already sitting at the table opposite him.

Kevin glanced over at him tentatively. Justin was completely distracted now, playing absentmindedly with a fork as he waited.

Kevin looked away again, sitting awkwardly with his hands on his lap. He let out a heavy sigh, glancing up a short time later as Toy brought the food over for them. Kevin couldn’t hold the smile from his face.

‘Oh, it looks so good’ he said.

‘I’m an excellent cook’ Toy said to him, not intending to brag. ‘Now please help yourself’ he said to Kevin as Justin already began to do so. ‘I will serve myself after you guys.’

‘Shouldn’t you eat first?’ Kevin asked him, ‘you know, since you cooked it?’

‘I can’t eat before my masters’ Toy grinned at him, taking his seat and waiting patiently for Kevin to dish up his food. ‘Please’ he said. ‘After you.’

‘Ok’ Kevin said flatly, reaching for the lasagne.

Some time passed, and as Justin had said, the three of them went upstairs to Justin’s bedroom.

Justin closed the door, after holding it open for them to enter. He closed the door behind them.

It was dark inside the room Kevin noticed, glancing over towards the windows to see the curtains drawn.

Justin grabbed Toy first, shoving him against the door and kissing him. Kevin took a step back, bowing his head and glancing away.

Justin let go of Toy then, releasing his hold as he turned towards Kevin, Toy behind him was flustered.

‘I want to undress you’ Justin gleamed, pressing his forehead against Kevin’s, his hand slipping beneath his shirt and running his fingers up his spine slowly, causing Kevin to shiver.

Kevin raised his arms to allow Justin to take his shirt off. Toy came up behind Justin then, covering Justin’s eyes playfully and giggling. Justin placed one of his hands upon Toy’s then, letting out a sigh as Toy hugged him from behind.

Minutes later the floor was strewn with clothes. The bed however was left untouched, the sheets perfectly flat.

The three of them knelt on the floor, Justin and Kevin facing each other, with Toy between them.

He moaned and cried out as he was used by Kevin and Justin, Justin behind him, and Kevin in front.

Toy coughed violently as Kevin thrust into his mouth, pulling out at the last minute and coming on his face.

Toy groaned loudly as behind him, Justin continued to thrust in him.

Kevin sat back on his heels, gasping as he watched. Toy rested on his front now, as Justin continued to thrust him, throwing his head back with a moan. Justin bowed his head, letting out a sigh before pulling out.

They rested for a few minutes, before Justin was hungry again.

He grabbed Toy roughly by the hair, jerking him back towards him. Kevin sat on the floor, leaning back against the bed behind him, with his arm upon the edge, he watched as Justin had his way with Toy again. Kevin sat completely naked with his legs open, feeling hot, feeling flushed as he saw Justin pull out then, carrying Toy over to the bed and throwing him down. Justin tied Toy’s wrists above his head, entering into him again. Kevin heard Toy’s pleas as Justin thrust into him on the bed behind him.

‘*Oh yeah...fuck me harder master!*’

Justin finished him a long while later, maintaining his stamina, and managing to contain himself until he could no longer.

‘It’s your turn’ Justin gasped, his body a sheen of sweat as his shoulders and chest rose and fell with every breath. ‘Go on’ Justin said crawling back off the bed and away from him.

‘You must be rested now.’

Kevin rose to his feet, kneeling on the bed and positioning himself behind Toy.

‘Are you alright?’ Kevin asked him quietly, leaning forwards to whisper into his ear.

‘Aw yeah’ Toy moaned, his shoulders beginning to tremble, ‘please.... please fuck me master...use me...*abuse me....*’

Kevin placed his hand upon Toy’s naked thigh, pausing only briefly before pushing himself in.

His rhythm was hard and fast, and beneath him, Toy moaned loudly.

Justin walked away from the bed as they did this, letting out a deep sigh and sweeping his blonde hair back.

Kevin sweated and panted in the room as he held Toy beneath him, feeling his skin hot beneath his touch.

As Kevin continued his rhythm, Justin approached him from behind, caressing Kevin beneath his jaw.

‘I want to fuck your mouth’ Justin uttered.

‘You weren’t kidding’ Kevin gasped, not looking away from Toy. ‘You sure have some appetite. Aren’t you tired?’

‘Not yet’ Justin breathed, taking Kevin’s face in both hands and turning him towards him. ‘I’m not done yet.’

Kevin kissed Justin, as he continued to fuck Toy.

‘I want to fuck your mouth’ Justin breathed again, ‘when you’re finished fucking him.’

‘Ok’ Kevin breathed. ‘Ok.’

When he was done with Toy, he shoved him forwards onto the bed, turning his attention now onto Justin.

Justin tied his wrists above Kevin’s head, tying them to one of the bed posts at the end of the bed, before sticking his cock in his mouth.

Kevin knelt before Justin, as Justin began to move.

Kevin choked and spluttered as Justin stood over him, thrusting hard down his throat. At times Kevin struggled to breath.

A long time later Justin came at last. Toy who had been resting on the bed raised his head then, watching with tired eyes Justin begin to shudder, Kevin before him let out a tiny whimper.

Justin pulled away and Kevin bowed his head, coughing onto his own chest, wiping it away with the back of his hand after Justin had freed his hands. Above him, Justin grinned hungrily.

‘No more’ Kevin whispered, ‘no more.... I can’t.... need to rest...’

‘Let’s sleep in a little gay pile on the bed’ Justin suggested jokingly.

Kevin was too tired to even think, hardly hearing what Justin was saying, he was vaguely aware of Justin pulling him to his feet. He hadn’t even realised that Justin had untied his wrists.

‘Come on’ Justin mumbled, pushing Kevin gently now towards the bed.

Toy shuffled over, giving them space to lie down. Toy rested facing Kevin who lay in the middle. Justin lay behind Kevin, closing his eyes, he was asleep in minutes.

‘Well’ Toy gleamed happily at Kevin. ‘It was nice to have known you.’

‘You’re leaving?’ Kevin asked him. Somehow, he felt strangely saddened by this, but he didn’t know why.

‘My time here is up’ Toy informed them. ‘My contract is over.’ He brought his hand to his mouth then, giggling. ‘I said *up*. Sounds kinky.’

Kevin frowned at that. ‘You never switch off do you’ he said to Toy flatly.

‘Thank you for having me’ Toy whispered seductively at Kevin, moving very close to him.

Kevin did not pull away, as Toy kissed him on the lips, slipping his tongue into his mouth. Toy giggled again, grasping Kevin's face with both hands. Holding him and kissing him more passionately now.

Toy broke away at last, bringing his hand to his mouth.

Toy smiled, beginning to suck his own middle finger, slipping it in and out of his mouth.

Kevin watched him mutely, Justin standing a step behind him watched without reaction.

Toy began to moan then, salivating before straightening up again and wiping his mouth dry with the back of his hand.

'Goodbye then' he said speaking normally. 'I wish the both of you the very best, and it was a pleasure to be given as a present to you' he said to Kevin.

'What will you do?' Kevin asked him, 'I mean...where will you go?'

'The world is a place brimming with possibilities' Toy gleamed at him. 'There are so many places I could go!'

'What about your stuff?' Kevin asked, noticing that Toy did not have any bags with him.

'I didn't bring any' Toy grinned. 'I like to travel with the barest minimum. But don't worry' he said hastily. 'I have more than enough money to look after myself for quite some time. As much as I love being fucked really hard...and boy do I love being fucked really hard...you still gotta pay to play.'

Kevin smirked at that.

'You're a strange one' Kevin shook his head.

'This will give you both the prefect opportunity to get to know each other without me' Toy continued, holding his hands behind his back and grinning.

Kevin felt a jolt in his chest at that, turning and glancing back at Justin who remained impassive.

'Have fun fucking!' Toy sang turning and walking away. 'Bye now.'

Kevin stared at him, standing in the doorway and watching him go down the corridor, heading towards the lifts.

Kevin tensed then as Justin walked around him, moving to close the door.

'Wait' Justin spoke as Kevin began to walk away.

Kevin hunched his shoulders, turning reluctantly back to face Justin.

'.....yes?'

'I want to fuck you.'

'Jeez he only just left' Kevin laughed. 'And why do you want me anyway?'

Justin took his hand off the door, straightening then.

'Because you feel good.'

Kevin swallowed nervously, averting his gaze.

'You...you'll hurt me again.'

'That was different' Justin told him. 'I was just...frustrated and angry. And without Alicia to... uh....'

'Yeah I get it' Kevin droned. 'You could take your frustrations and anger out on him because he was already used to you.' Kevin raised his head then grimacing. 'What was he like first time.'

'Hesitant.'

Kevin began to laugh. 'Changed that pretty quick then didn't you?' he said, standing with his hands on his hips.

'Did you like it?' Justin asked suddenly.

'What?'

'Did you like having his cock inside you?' Justin took a step closer, causing Kevin to back away.

Justin paused.

'You seemed to like it' Justin went on. 'From what I saw anyway.'

Kevin flushed then, turning his head away.

'What do you want?' he asked Justin shortly.

'I want you.'

Kevin gritted his teeth. 'I should have known.' He looked back at Justin then. 'You know I'm not gay right?'

'I know' Justin grinned. 'You like girls too. You like both.'

Kevin pursed his lips.

'I....' he forced himself to speak. 'I did like it. I liked how it felt. And I liked Alicia.' He furrowed his brow, speaking slowly and calmly. 'You want to have me again?'

'Yes' Justin breathed. 'You felt so good...I have wanted you for the longest time.'

'I don't want you to hurt me again' Kevin mumbled.

'I won't' Justin whispered. 'I promise I won't.'

'Alright' Kevin said. 'And...if I tell you to stop, you will stop?'

'Yes.'

Kevin let out a sigh, relaxing his body.

'Alright' he said. 'Let's do it.'

'Are you sure?'

'Yes' Kevin replied. 'I...I am sure.'

Justin hesitated for a moment, before stepping closer to him, and this time Kevin did not pull away.

Justin took him by the chin, tilting his head back gently as he looked down upon him.

Justin brushed Kevin's dark blonde hair back.

Kevin gasped then, as Justin slipped his tongue into him, taking him.

Justin watched him closely as he kissed him. Kevin had flinched when Justin had first touched him, now he seemed to relax a little.

Justin pulled away.

'Shall we go upstairs to my room?'

Kevin blinked then, swallowing the lump in his throat.

'.....yes...' Kevin said. 'But only if you're gentle.'

## Chapter Nine

### The Way things Are Now

Justin pushed him back onto the bed, Kevin lay there staring up at the ceiling, heart pounding inside him as he felt Justin lift his shirt, felt his tongue run along his chest.

Kevin felt a shiver run through his body as Justin began to kiss him, began to bite him gently. He ran his hand down Kevin's stomach, slipping into his trousers and caressing him.

Kevin gasped, his chest rising and falling.

'Does that feel good?' Justin asked after a time.

'Yeah.... yeah' Kevin breathed.

He tensed slightly as Justin moved away from him sharply, sitting back on his heels and taking off his shirt.

'No' Justin whispered as Kevin moved to take off his own shirt. 'I want to do it for you, just relax and lie back.'

Kevin did so, allowing Justin to lift the shirt off over his head.

He threw it to the side, reaching to Kevin's trousers and unzipping them.

Kevin lay there naked and exposed, head turned to the side, cheeks flushed as he breathed slowly.

'You're so handsome' Justin breathed, feeling Kevin's dark blonde hair between his fingers.

'Ha' Kevin laughed then, glancing towards him, 'not as handsome as you superstar.'

Justin frowned in amusement, hesitating for a split second, before leaning forwards.

Kevin let out a breath as Justin began to kiss his neck, running his tongue across his collar bone and down.

Kevin drew a sharp intake of breath as Justin put his mouth around him, grasping onto Kevin's inner thigh then.

'Just relax' Justin breathed pulling back briefly. Kevin bowed his head, letting out a slow sigh before resting his head back against the pillows.

He gritted his teeth then, letting out a moan. Justin moved his head back and forth, sucking gently, looking up at Kevin with his mouth still around him.

Kevin balled the sheets up in his hands, spreading his legs wider.

'More' he gasped, 'm-more....'

Justin shifted on the bed, adjusting himself.

Kevin arched his back, turning his head to the side as he breathed in shallow gasps.

'That feels so good' he moaned. 'I'm going to cum.'

'I want you to' Justin breathed pulling back briefly, 'I want you to cum.'

Justin began to work faster, Kevin reached out and grabbed him by the hair suddenly, moaning through gritted teeth.

He let out one final gasp, his shoulders slumped as he dropped his hand, falling back down onto the bed, his body trembling.

Justin sat up slowly, bringing his hand to his mouth and coughing into his palm. He reached for a towel beside the bed, wiping his hands and mouth.

'Sorry if I....'

'Don't be sorry' Justin grinned. 'I like it. I just don't like to swallow. Well...' he thought then, 'not all the time....'

'Hu?'

'Do you want me to fuck you now?' Justin offered.

Kevin looked down, seeing that Justin was hard.

‘Um...yeah...if you go easy on me....’

‘I will’ Justin breathed. ‘I will let you lead.’

Kevin watched as Justin reached for the drawer of the bedside table.

‘I’ve got something that will make it easier’ he said, bringing out the bottle of lube.

‘You keep that by your bed?’ Kevin scoffed turning sharply away.

‘Where else would I keep it’ Justin asked him flatly.

Kevin smirked at that. ‘Good point.’

‘I want you to sit on top of me’ Justin said squirting the contents of the bottle onto his open hand.

‘Alright’ Kevin muttered, shifting as Justin lay back against the headboard.

Kevin straddled him, grabbing onto the headboard behind and lifting himself up as Justin ran his hand up his thigh, moving around to behind him.

Kevin grimaced then, beginning to tremble as Justin slipped his fingers in, middle finger first, then another, moving back and forth gently.

‘Does that feel good?’

‘Yeah it does’ Kevin whispered, body tense and brow furrowed.

Justin played with him for a time, making sure he was properly wet down there before speaking again.

‘I want to you come down now’ Justin told him speaking softly, pulling his hand away.

‘You’re ready.’

Kevin who had been holding himself up on his knees looked down at Justin. He was massive.

‘Just take it slow’ Justin said as Kevin lowered himself down. ‘You’re in control.’

Kevin reached down to touch Justin, positioning himself before lowering his body.

He moved carefully, easing himself down until he was all the way.

Justin tilted his head, relaxing slightly.

‘Can you move?’ he asked Kevin.

Kevin stayed there for a moment, breathing calmly, before lifting his body slightly, and bringing it down again.

He began a gentle rhythm, up and down on top of Justin.

‘Does that feel good?’ he asked Justin.

‘Yeah’ Justin smiled slyly, holding onto Kevin’s waist. ‘For you?’

‘It feels ok.’

‘Can I have you on your back?’

Kevin paused, looking at Justin.

‘Do you think you can handle it?’

‘Yeah’ Kevin whispered. ‘We’ll try it.’

He got off him, lying back against the bed as Justin sat up, leaning forwards over Kevin, moving between his legs.

Justin lifted one of his legs, holding Kevin behind the knee as his other hand went to Kevin.

He slipped two fingers inside Kevin, working for a moment before pushing himself in again.

Kevin let out a moan, his voice breaking, he tensed, turning his head to the side and gritting his teeth as Justin pulled back slightly.

Justin paused, watching Kevin gasping, waiting for his body to relax, before pushing forwards again more slowly.

Kevin grimaced, but this time did not cry out.  
Justin began to thrust inside him, careful not to move too forcefully, his brow furrowed in concentration. Beneath him Kevin's cheeks became ever more flushed.  
Kevin reached up to him, holding him around the back of the neck.  
'Don't.... don't stop...' he gasped.  
Justin held him tighter, pushing into him harder.  
'Can you lie on your front?' he asked then pausing.  
'Yeah' Kevin whispered, and Justin pulled out of him.  
Kevin turned over, lying on his front and feeling Justin's weight on top of him immediately.  
Justin pushed his legs apart. He grimaced as Justin entered him again, thrusting harder this time.  
Kevin grasped the sheets at the edge of the bed as Justin fucked him. Pinned beneath him, he was helpless, unable to move.  
Kevin was trapped beneath him, simply waiting for Justin to finish, his body tense.  
Justin had a lot of stamina, and continued for a long time, until coming at last.  
Justin thrust one last time, grasping Kevin's arms painfully. He let out a breath, his body relaxing as he pulled himself out.  
Kevin let out a sigh of relief as Justin got off him, able to allow his body to relax fully again.  
Kevin pushed himself up on his knees gingerly, lifting his hand to his head.  
*I can't believe I did that.*  
'How did that feel?' Justin asked, sitting back against the bed, legs spread.  
'Yeah' Kevin said, 'that was fine.'  
'I hope I didn't hurt you.'  
'No, I'm ok' Kevin said facing him.  
'You have such a fine body' Justin purred, 'and you're so tight.'  
'Ah...thanks' Kevin laughed awkwardly.  
He rose from the bed gingerly, reaching for his clothes.  
'I gotta go' Kevin said.  
'Where are you going?'  
'Do you care?' Kevin asked, pausing to turn back.  
Justin smirked. 'I guess not.'  
'Yeah' Kevin raised an eyebrow. 'That's what I thought.'

'So how are you today?' Christina asked Kevin when he turned up for work.  
'I'm fine' Kevin replied tiredly.  
'How is Justin?' Christina winked slyly at him. 'Oh!' she said suddenly seeing Kevin's reaction. 'What happened? Oh, please tell me!'  
Kevin didn't mean to react to her words, but they had known each other for so long, she just knew how to read him, better than anyone else in his life.  
'I don't really have time right now' Kevin said averting his eyes.  
'Oh, come on' Christina persisted, pressing her boobs into his arm deliberately. 'I know something happened. You are so easy and fun. Just tell me or I will annoy you until you do.'

Kevin groaned irritated, rolling his eyes and tilting his head towards her.

‘Alright’ he began reluctantly. ‘Something did happen.’

‘Tell me.’

‘We had sex’ Kevin mumbled quietly so that only she could hear, ‘Justin and I.’

‘What was it like?’ Christina asked with eyes wide.

‘It was...uh.... mmmm.....well he didn’t hurt me this time.’

‘So, it was good?’

‘Well when Alicia and I...you know....’

‘Had sex. Oh, you let him fuck you, didn’t you?’

‘Yeah.’

‘Oh, come on don’t get shy’ Christina told him straightening again but remained standing very close to him. ‘You liked it, right?’

‘Yeah’ Kevin muttered hunching his shoulder. ‘It did feel good.’

‘So, what about Justin? What did it feel like with him?’

‘Justin is just a bit rougher’ Kevin mumbled.

‘Whoo boy’ Christina cackled, running her fingers through her hair. ‘So, what is going to happen now?’

‘What do you mean?’

‘Well he’s going to want you more’ Christina told him, ‘isn’t he.’

Kevin frowned then, brow furrowed as he narrowed his eyes at her suspiciously.

‘It might be good for you’ Christina gleamed happily putting her hands together before her.

‘What do you mean?’ Kevin scoffed, moving over towards the locker.

‘You might come to enjoy it’ Christina teased. ‘You never know.’

A silence hung in the air for a moment, then Christina turned and walked away, pausing in the doorway and winking back at him, before slipping around the corner and out of the locker room.

Kevin watched her go, sighing heavily as he opened his locker, beginning to dress for work.

When Kevin got home, he found Justin sitting upon the sofa waiting for him.

‘Oh hey’ Kevin said, closing the door after him as Justin rose to his feet. ‘I didn’t realise you would be here.’

He turned and saw Justin approaching him.

Kevin tensed as Justin closed the distance between them, pressing his body against Kevin’s and trapping him against the door.

‘Ah’ Kevin gasped. ‘What are you doing?’

Justin kissed him then, holding Kevin by the wrists.

‘Stop’ Kevin hissed, breaking away and turning his head to the side.

‘I want you.’

‘Again? I mean...already?’

‘You still owe me for what you did’ Justin told him simply. ‘Alicia is gone because of you.’

‘I know’ Kevin replied sourly. ‘You keep telling me. But I can’t...I’m.... too sore.’

‘Then let me fuck your mouth’ Justin said tilting his head, his bright-blond dyed hair falling about his shoulders, his green eyes piercing.

He pressed his forehead against Kevin’s gently, their lips inches apart.

Justin’s grin was predatory, and when Kevin did not react or resist, Justin began to chuckle.

He reached past Kevin, locking the front door. Kevin felt a twinge of nervousness in the pit of his stomach.

Justin took Kevin by the wrist, dragging him away and towards the stairs, Kevin stumbling after him.

Back in Justin’s bedroom, Kevin was pushed upon the bed again, lying back against the headboard.

Justin sat on his chest, holding Kevin’s hands together above his head, pinning him there. With his free hand he unzipped himself, touching himself. He was already hard.

‘Are you ready?’ Justin asked him.

‘Yeah’ Kevin gasped staring up at Justin. ‘I’m ready.’

‘Open your mouth.’

Kevin did so, and Justin pushed himself forwards.

‘Mmmph.’

‘Don’t struggle’ Justin told him calmly. ‘Just relax.’

Kevin tried to shift his legs, hands still held above his head.

He let out another muffled moan as Justin began to thrust, pushing deep towards the back of his throat.

Justin grabbed Kevin by the hair roughly with both hands now, releasing his hold on Kevin’s wrists.

Kevin grabbed Justin by the thighs, holding him tightly as Justin continued to thrust.

‘I’m going to cum’ Justin gasped. ‘I’m going cum....’

He thrust one last time, causing Kevin to choke.

Justin held himself forwards, grasping Kevin tightly by the hair as he held him there forcefully.

‘Swallow it’ Justin whispered speaking dangerously, ‘swallow it...’

Kevin stared up at Justin, eyes shimmering and body trembling as he dug his nails into Justin’s flesh hard. Kevin hesitated, flinching, closing his eyes tightly now.

He swallowed once deeply, and Justin pulled out of him.

Kevin began to cough violently, hand going to his mouth.

‘It’s bitter’ he gasped.

Justin moved off the bed, standing.

‘Dinner will be soon’ he said to Kevin as he zipped himself up again. ‘I’ll see you downstairs.’

He did not look at Kevin as he said this. He strode out of the room without a backwards glance, closing the door after him.

Kevin let out a heavy sigh, resting back against the bed and allowing his body to relax.

He felt so drained.

‘So, who cooked all of this?’

‘I do have some skills in cooking’ Justin smiled gently, raising an eyebrow. ‘Why, is there something wrong with it?’

‘Well its ok I guess. You will never become a chief but its passable.’

‘Is that supposed to be a compliment’ Justin tilted his head in almost a playful manner, his bright blonde hair falling about his face.

‘It’s the beset you’re going to get out of me’ Kevin replied flatly. ‘The cheesy potatoes are very nice. The meat is a little dry.’

‘I followed the cook book.’

‘I’m surprised a superstar like you cooks for himself’ Kevin noted.

‘I don’t want any more strangers in my home right now’ Justin said dismissively. ‘I want us to be alone when we fuck. And next time I will make the meat far juicier.’

Kevin steepled his fingers, leaning forwards with his elbows on the table.

‘What?’ Justin said raising an eyebrow.

‘Do you miss Toy?’ Kevin asked him.

‘What do you mean?’ Justin asked. ‘He was a gift to you. The questing is do *you* miss him?’

‘How’s the new job going?’ Kevin asked.

‘New job?’

‘You got a new photo shoot recently, didn’t you? I saw you outside. A few days back. The other day...whatever.’

‘Oh, you saw me?’ Justin grinned in amusement. ‘How fun. Did you not think I looked so beautiful?’

‘Real glamorous’ Kevin said flatly again, reaching for his drink and glancing up at Justin as he took a sip. ‘My friend thought you were very handsome. She has a crush on you, you know?’

Justin chuckled.

‘Your friend? She? Is she your girlfriend?’

‘No’ Kevin said putting his drink down deliberately and grabbing his fork. ‘Though she wants to be. She’s totally infatuated with me. So obvious. But I’m not really interested in that. She’s a nice girl though.’

‘Why?’ Justin asked with curiosity. ‘Why are you not interested in her?’

‘Nah she’s nice and all’ Kevin replied non-committedly. ‘She...she’s just not for me. A bit too clingy, you know?’

Kevin continued to eat.

‘No’ Justin said. ‘I don’t think I know. I’m not really...familiar with people who are too clingy.’

‘Are you not?’ Kevin asked with surprise. ‘Don’t you have hordes of girls falling for you?’

‘Yes’ Justin said glancing away a little uncomfortable then, it was clear that he did not like this topic. ‘I don’t really count them though’ Justin said. ‘I mean...when I have uh.... relationships with uh...guys. I don’t have trouble with those who are too clingy. Alicia

was....' He trailed off suddenly, taking a drink to distract him. 'She was an exception' he finished after a time.

'So, you only like guys?'

'Yeah?' Justin replied. 'I don't like girls. I mean they are nice and all but....to have sex with a girl...ugh I just....' He cringed then, shaking his head appearing visibly disgusted. 'I just don't like.... vagina.'

'I see' Kevin frowned. 'You know Toy said the exact same thing.'

'He did now did he?'

'Yup.'

'Well.... something Toy and I have in common' Justin went on, swirling his drink in his glass and staring down at it, 'we like ass.'

'Hmm' Kevin replied, only half listening.

'Yeah' Justin went on, his eyes becoming distant. 'I just love...so good.'

'Why did you get Alicia to dress up like that?'

'Because' Justin answered quickly, sounding defensive, 'it was easier to uh...spend time together that way. It was never official, but people speculated we were together. It would have...caused me problems if people found out I were gay. I am in this industry, a model and star. I have to live up to people's expectations. Kinda sad really that I have to hide who I really am' Justin mused, still staring at his drink. 'The whole thing with Alicia dressing as a woman...that was a mutual decision. It benefited us both. And he came to really like it. He was beautiful. Even though he looked like a woman, I still found him attractive...because I knew what was beneath his skirt.'

'You miss him?'

'It wasn't ever supposed to be serious' Justin said quickly. 'It was perhaps best that he left before I started to develop true feelings for him.'

Kevin stared at Justin hard at that.

'What would happen if people found out you were gay?' he asked.

'I don't know' Justin mumbled. 'I can't say for sure but... but I have an image to hold. My agent would not like it. I am supposed to keep up this image, it's what people expect of me. Girls love me. If they found out.... I don't know...' he took another drink. 'I don't want to fall in love.'

'Why don't you want to fall in love?' Kevin asked him.

Justin swallowed then, eyes distant.

'I...' his expression grew darker. 'It doesn't matter' he finished shortly, straightening. 'What are you doing today?'

'Just going out' Kevin replied noncommittedly.

'Seeing your girl again?'

Kevin smiled at Justin.

'Doesn't matter' Kevin answered to him.

Justin smiled back at Kevin in amusement.

'I want to have you again tonight' he told him, pushing away from the table and rising.

'When will you be back?'

'When I get back' Kevin answered.

Justin began to chuckle, turning and moving over towards the kitchen.

‘I really can’t get enough of you’ Justin sighed, speaking to the air.  
‘You have a really high sex drive by the way.’  
‘It’s just the way I am’ Justin replied simply.

## Chapter Ten

### The Other Contract

Kevin was out with his friends the next day when he received a call. He turned away from his friends as he pulled the mobile from his pocket, answering it quickly when he saw that it was Christina who was calling him. He held the phone to his ear, listening silently for a moment, before hanging up. ‘I gotta go you guys’ Kevin spoke to his friends then. ‘I gotta sort something out.’ ‘Who was on the phone?’ his friend said. ‘Christina’ Kevin replied shortly, before turning and jogging away with no other explanation. His friends stared after him.

He saw her in the park, striding towards her without pausing. Christina watched him with wide eyes as he approached and passed by her. Kevin completely ignored her, instead heading straight towards a figure he recognised. The figure turned just as Kevin approached him, just in time as Kevin punched him full on in the face, causing the man to fall backwards. ‘I told you to stay the fuck away from my girlfriend!’ Kevin yelled at the man. ‘You fucking bastard’ the man hissed, rising to his feet, he had been caught by surprise, but quickly recovered. He grabbed Kevin by the front of his shirt then, but Kevin acted fast and without hesitation, instantly headbutted him hard on the nose, causing the man to let him go. The man stumbled back for the second time, holding his nose which began to bleed, frozen in shock for a moment. He straightened up, and attacked Kevin, swinging a fist at him. Kevin leant back, dodging the first blow, but not the second one. The man grabbed Kevin by the shoulders, moving to hurt him again, but Kevin held the man back, snarling with rage and shoving him away. He fought with the man, but was suddenly grabbed from behind. A short distance away, Christina turned and ran away to seek help. Kevin was held by a man behind him, immobilised as several men began to attack him. Kevin tried to fight back, to free himself, but there was little he could do, as he was punched in the stomach repeatedly. Eventually falling to his knees, but they did not stop. There were several of them, and they hit him while he was down. Kevin remembered feeling nothing but pain, and not much after that. He woke sometime later, in hospital.

Christina leant over him, she was crying.

‘Ah’ Kevin gasped, feeling instant pain as he woke. ‘Wha...what...’

‘Don’t try to talk’ Christina said, caressing his cheek tenderly and speaking in a whisper. ‘Just try to stay still.’

Kevin shifted in the bed then, breathing slowly.

‘Ha’ he began. ‘I really did it this time.’

‘I’m sorry you got hurt because of me’ Christina gasped, ‘I’m sorry this has happened to you...this all my fault...’

‘No’ Kevin said to Christina. ‘I chose to do this. This was because of me. I...’ he smiled then, a genuine smile. ‘If I could turn back time’ he said to Christina, ‘I would have done the same thing all over again.’

‘I know you would’ Christina uttered.

Kevin tilted his head towards her, still resting back against the pillows he smiled lovingly.

Christina smiled back at him, the edges of her eyes crinkling. She bowed her head, dabbing away the tears tentatively.

‘So, what happened?’ he asked her. ‘I’m.... afraid I don’t remember much.’

‘Things got really crazy’ Christina told him. ‘They jumped you. There was a whole gang.’

‘Oh’ Kevin said casually. ‘I see. Ha ha’ he laughed weakly. ‘I guess that is why I ended up here.’

He grimaced then, body tense.

‘Are you alright?’ Christina asked him, worry in her tone.

‘How bad are my injuries?’ Kevin asked.

‘You’ll live’ Christina said. ‘You should be out of here soon, it will take a few days for you to recover.’

‘That’s great’ Kevin groaned. ‘I would hate to have to hang around here for longer than I have to. Hospitals are so boring, in fact I am already bored.’

Christina chuckled under her breath.

‘You have a really sweet laugh’ Kevin said to her.

‘Is that what you think?’

‘You know, I really want you now, I.... I want to...have you sit on top of me.’

‘Ok’ Christina laughed, rising to her feet. ‘I’ll be going now. I should be at work. You’ll give me a call when you’re discharged won’t you? You will do that yes?’

‘Of course, I will’ Kevin spoke to her.

‘Ok’ Christina said, holding her hands before her. ‘I will see you next time then.’

‘Ok’ Kevin replied shortly.

‘And Kevin?’

‘Yes?’

Christina smiled at him, pausing for a moment.

‘Thank you.’

Kevin stared at her for a moment, before breaking into a smile.

‘No problem’ he replied. ‘You could reward me with a free ride.’

Christina grinned at him teasingly, before turning and walking away without another word, giving him a final wave as she went.

Kevin watched her go, until she was out of his line of sight. He turned away from the door then, looking at the ward around him. He was in a large room with about eight beds in total, most were empty, the other patients were sleeping or resting, and nothing interesting was happening. Kevin stared upwards towards the ceiling. He let out a heavy sigh, blinking slowly. He already felt bored.

It was the next day when Christina visited him again. 'Oh, hey there' she beamed as she approached. 'Oh god please tell me you brought some food!' Kevin gasped, reaching out to her desperately as she drew closer to his bed. Christina chuckled lightly, stopping beside him. 'Yes of course I did' she said, dragging an empty chair towards him and sitting down on it. Kevin watched her with wide and hungry eyes, his attention transfixed in anticipation as she rummaged through her bag. 'Here.' 'Oh my god is that a sandwich?!' Kevin blurted then. 'Please give it to me!' Christina could not help but laugh at him now. 'You're like a starving animal in a zoo.' 'That's not funny' he said tearing the packet open. 'I *am* starving. The food here is terrible.' A short time later. 'I'm still hungry.' 'Do they not feed you at all in this place?' Christina asked raising an eyebrow. 'Have you *seen* the food?' 'Yeah you said its terrible' Christina answered in a monotone. 'Well it is' Kevin answered sourly. 'Oh, now you're just being ungrateful.' 'No' Kevin said patiently. 'You have not seen it let alone tried it.' 'Oh, come on its not that bad I'm sure' Christina said rolling her eyes and turning away in exasperation. 'I was actually brave enough to try a little bit.' 'Oh, waw yeah sure you're so freekin brave.' 'It tasted of air.' 'Well at least it didn't taste bad' Christian answered shortly. 'Please tell me you have more food in your bag.' 'Of course, I do' Christina smiled, reaching into her bag again. 'You know I'll look after you, especially after what you've done for me, and not just recently.' 'Is that twat-face leaving you alone now?' 'Don't be horrid' she told him, handing him a pasty. 'And yes. He has so far.' 'Because you know if he's still causing you trouble, I'll fight him again as soon as I get out of here.' 'I don't want you to kill yourself' Christina told him seriously, 'I would never forgive you.'

‘I have to stand up for what I believe in, even though it’s hard. I cannot be weak. I have to protect those I care about.... protect those around me.’

‘There is a limit’ Christina said to him in a level tone.

She watched in silence for a few moments as Kevin ate, speaking again a few minutes later.

‘Better?’

‘Aw yeah thank you so much’ he moaned. ‘God that was so good. Well done for choosing a good pasty.’

She smirked at him.

‘Seriously’ Kevin said smiling at her. ‘Thank you for caring for me.’

‘Don’t be so silly’ she shook her head.

‘You’re such a great friend.’

‘Stop it. Please. You’re not dying.’

He tilted his head as her, smiling warmly at her.

‘I love you’ he said.

She frowned at him, keeping her lips tight shut.

Kevin looked over her head then, his expression changing quickly to confusion.

‘What the hell???’

Justin stood in the open doorway to the room, smiling with an amused expression down at Kevin.

‘What...?’ Christina asked, glancing around and seeing Justin standing there. ‘Wait... *Justin?*’

‘It’s you again’ Justin replied, speaking to her.

‘You fucked Kevin didn’t you.’

‘Christina!’ Kevin cried out.

Justin began to laugh at that. ‘What a strange girl.’

He ran his fingers through his hair, which was short at the top and long at the bottom, wavy and beautiful, it was dyed a bright artificial blonde. His figure was lean and muscular and flawless, green eyes shining bright and skin like porcelain. As usual he looked incredibly handsome, perfection, like an angel.

‘What are you doing here?’ Kevin asked him shortly.

‘You don’t want me here?’

‘You have no reason to be here.’

Justin stared at him in silence for a moment, without reaction. And then he smiled.

‘I guess you’re right’ Justin relented. ‘Call it curiosity then.’

‘I’m glad I am so interesting to you’ Kevin replied flatly.

At that Justin began to laugh.

‘How did you find me?’ Kevin asked.

‘With great ease’ he said leaning back against the wall and folding his arms. ‘I just wanted to see you. You really got yourself beat up pretty bad. Why did you do it?’

‘None of your business’ Kevin answered shortly. ‘That’s why.’

‘He was protecting me’ Christina spoke up.

‘What’s wrong with you?’ Kevin scowled at her.

‘What?’ Christina shrugged back at Kevin. ‘I’m curious about him.’ She turned back to Justin. ‘I want to know more.’

‘You told her about us?’ Justin asked.

‘There is no *us*’ Kevin answered. ‘But I did tell her what was going on.’

‘I see.’

‘Christina knows about you but she’s promised to keep the whole thing a secret’ Kevin said.

‘I’m glad’ Justin spoke seriously. ‘It would be a shame if people found out about me.’

‘Why are you bothering to keep it a secret anyway?’ Christina asked him loudly.

‘I have a reputation to hold. People expect certain things from me. But I can’t change who I am. I *have* to keep it a secret.’

Christina turned away then, holding her head as she laughed.

‘This is such a bizarre arrangement. Kevin does thing I would never...’

‘Is that true?’ Justin raised his head.

‘Well you guys have fun’ Christina said rising suddenly.

‘Wait are you seriously leaving me with him?’ Kevin asked Christina in disbelief.

‘I have work later’ Christina replied, flicking her hair back and smirking at Kevin.

‘Seriously?’ Kevin’s eyes were pleading.

Christina only giggled at him, turning her back on him and staring at Justin now.

‘So interesting’ she muttered under her breath looking him up and down, though both of them could hear her clearly.

‘As are you’ Justin countered, looking deep into her eyes. It was as if he was seeing inside her.

A moment of silence passed between the two, and Christina walked past Justin slowly then, not taking her eyes off him until she was out of the room.

Kevin was sad to see her go.

He reluctantly turned his eyes back onto Justin.

‘Why are you here? Did you come here to make me feel uncomfortable?’

‘I told you it was curiosity.’

‘But that can’t be the only reason. So what is it?’

‘I came to tell you those boys won’t bother you again.’

‘Ok, first that’s creepy and second I don’t need your help. I don’t want it.’

‘Stubborn’ Justin sneered at him then. ‘And I was just trying to help you.’

‘Wait a minute’ Kevin said suddenly, sitting up then. ‘I know why you’re doing this.’

Justin bowed his head silently, staring at Kevin with clear amusement, waiting for him to continue.

‘You think you own me. You’re doing this so.... I’m not hurt...so you can...’ Kevin’s expression darkened. ‘You will have to be gentle with me next time’ he whispered. ‘I am still a bit sore.’

Justin tilted his head slowly at that, his blonde hair falling over his eyes.

Kevin turned away in disgust. ‘You only care about my body, you don’t care about me.’

Justin continued to stare at him, maintaining a distance between them. He still stood by the door, he had not approached his bed.

*The next day (Kevin has been discharged from hospital)*

Justin pushed Kevin back onto the bed, bearing over him.  
Kevin whimpered as Justin grasped his arm tightly.  
‘Are you alright?’  
‘Yeah’ Kevin gasped. ‘Yeah...’  
Justin leant back, easing off him a little.  
‘You are so handsome’ Justin uttered. ‘So flawless.’  
Kevin hunched his shoulders then, turning his head to the side, gritting his teeth, cheeks flushed.  
‘You keep saying that, you don’t mean it.’  
‘Of course, I do.’  
‘It feels weird to get compliments from you like this’ Kevin said, turning back to face Justin.  
Justin stared down at him. For a moment it looked as if he were about to say something, but instead he closed his mouth.  
He leant over Kevin again, kissing him tenderly. Kevin opened his mouth, feeling Justin’s tongue inside him. It felt good, but his body still felt sore all over, and he flinched then, as he felt Justin’s weight increase upon him.  
Justin pulled Kevin’s shirt up, moving his down his body, kissing Kevin’s chest, and moving further down.  
Kevin let out a shuddering breath, shifting on the bed, as Justin pushed his leg to the side, hand snaking up his thigh towards his crotch, caressing him before carefully unbuttoning him, pulling the zipper down.  
Kevin began to gasp.  
‘Just relax’ Justin whispered, biting the flesh of Kevin’s leg firmly.  
Kevin’s chest rose and fell slowly, and he let go of the sheets he had grabbed onto, forcing himself to stay calm as Justin’s hold on his thigh tightened.  
‘Put your head back’ Justin told him. ‘Just relax.’  
Kevin let out a breath, staring up at the ceiling. He let out a moan as Justin put his mouth around him, moving his head back and forth.  
Kevin began to gasp.  
‘Don’t....’ he uttered, his voice weak, ‘don’t stop...’  
Justin glanced up at Kevin. He moved his hand into Kevin’s trousers then, slipping his finger into him.  
Kevin arched his back, holding into the pillow behind his head.  
‘More.... more...’  
Justin leaned back then, wiping the back of his mouth, stopping before Kevin was able to come.  
‘It’s my turn now’ he breathed, taking the top of Kevin’s trousers and pulling them down. He threw them to the side.  
Kevin flinched in pain then as Justin put his weight back onto Kevin.  
‘Sorry’ Justin whispered, pausing suddenly. ‘I just.... get carried away.’  
‘Be careful’ Kevin spoke softly to him, lying on the bed before Justin naked. ‘Please...’  
Justin stared down at him, before reaching for him again.  
He began to play with Kevin for several minutes, before lifting Kevin’s leg over his shoulder, unzipping himself.

Kevin looked down, seeing that Justin was hard.

‘Just relax’ Justin told him again. ‘Trust me.’

Kevin let out a breath, resting his head back against the bed.

He grimaced then, clenching his jaws as Justin pushed himself in. He was so big.

‘It hurts’ Kevin gasped.

Justin pulled out.

‘Get on your hands and knees. It would be easier like that.’

Kevin let out a groan, sitting up then and turning over. He rested on his knees now. Justin placed his hand upon his back, pushing his front down onto the bed.

‘Just stay still’ Justin whispered into Kevin’s ear, before straightening again.

Kevin breathed slowly through his mouth, tensing slightly then as he felt Justin push into him for the second time.

He stayed on his knees as Justin thrust into him, using him, taking his pleasure from him, before reaching around and touching Kevin.

Kevin let out a moan, Justin continuing to work his hand, until Kevin came. He breathed in shallow gasps, still resting on his front as Justin pulled back, his hands sticky now.

He thrust into Kevin again hard, causing Kevin to moan loudly, body trembling, feeling both strong pain and pleasure at the same time.

He lay on the bed alone afterwards, hearing the sounds of the shower running from downstairs, as Justin washed himself.

Kevin stayed where he was, running his hand down his own body.

He touched himself to see if he was bleeding. He still felt very tender, but his body was healing.

He let out a sigh, closing his eyes, falling asleep shortly after.

‘I want you to myself’ Justin told him a short time later.

‘Uh-hu?’

Kevin was dressed now, and Justin had had his shower. They sat together now at the kitchen table, facing each other.

‘I thought I *was* already yours’ Kevin answered.

‘I want more of you.’

Kevin raised his head, blinking slowly at Justin.

‘I want to make it official’ Justin said.

‘Official?’

‘I want you to be my personal pet. Just like Toy. But Toy was yours, not mine.’

Kevin frowned at him, before tilting his head, looking away.

‘I want you to write it down’ Justin said, sliding towards Kevin, a single blank piece of paper.

‘What?’ Kevin said shortly, very confused.

‘Write on that piece of paper’ Justin told him, ‘that you are my Toy.’

‘Oh, Justin you are so funny.’

‘I am not smiling.’

‘Why would you want me to write it down? Are you planning on blackmailing me? Weak. I’ll just deny everything.... or maybe I won’t...’ he began to chuckle.

‘Do you really think me that low?’ Justin asked him.

‘I don’t know what to think’ Kevin told him shortly. ‘I don’t even know you.’

‘You like it don’t you?’ Justin asked him.

Kevin stared at him hard, clenching his jaw.

‘Be honest’ Justin pressed.

‘Yes’ Kevin admitted. ‘It does feel good, but I...’ he trailed off.

He looked down at the paper.

‘Why do you want this?’ Kevin asked.

‘I want it’ Justin said, ‘for my own peace of mind. You say you don’t care if people know what you do. What will you lose?’

Kevin hesitated, staring down at the paper before him.

‘What do you want to do to me?’

‘I want to hurt you’ Justin said. ‘It...turns me on...’

‘That’s twisted.’

‘I won’t do anything you don’t want me to.’

‘Like last time’ Kevin said raising his head. ‘I mean...first time when you....’

‘You agreed to it’ Justin told him shortly. ‘I warned you.’

‘I didn’t know...’ Kevin mumbled. ‘I just.... I didn’t know.’

‘This time will be different. If you are uncomfortable with anything, I will stop. This I promise.’

‘Do you promise?’ Kevin said. ‘Do you really?’

‘Yes’ Justin said. ‘I swear.’

Kevin stared at him for a moment, before turning his eyes down to the page.

‘Ok’ he said, leaning forwards and taking the pen. ‘Um...’ he fell silent in thought for a moment.

‘Go on’ Justin prompted, when Kevin glanced up at him with a little uncertainty.

Kevin looked down at the paper again, lifting the pen.

He wrote:

I, Kevin Logan Anderson, as of today, and Justin’s Toy.

‘I will wait until you are healed fully’ Justin told him. ‘I don’t want to hurt you too much.’

‘Ok?’

‘Tell me when you are ready’ Justin said rising to his feet and taking the paper from Kevin. ‘I will wait for you.’

‘Waw’ Kevin replied sarcastically. ‘You are so kind.’

Justin did not answer as he turned away, folded the paper away and hiding it.

Chapter Eleven  
Life after This

‘Hey Christina.’

‘Hey Kevin!’

Kevin entered Christina’s apartment without knocking, as he so often did.

Weeks had passed since Kevin had left the hospital, and he was finally fully recovered now. Kevin was his old self again, and life with Justin, though it was exhausting, was becoming normal of a sort.

‘Hurry up and come in’ Christina said to him excitedly.

Kevin closed the door behind him, stepping into the apartment.

Christina stepped up to him suddenly without warning, kissing him on the lips.

‘What was that for?’ Kevin asked, hand going to his mouth in surprise.

‘I’m just so happy’ Christina gleamed.

‘You look a little tired.’

‘Just work’ Christina waved him away. ‘I had trouble sleeping last night. It doesn’t matter.’

Kevin moved past her then, going to sit on the sofa.

‘So, what have you found out?’ Kevin asked her, as she moved towards the kitchen to make them both a cup of tea.

‘I’ve been doing a bit of digging, and Justin it seems is quite an interesting character.’

‘How did you find out?’ Kevin asked Christina.

Christina turned back to Kevin then, eyes gleaming brightly with excitement.

‘I found Alicia.’

‘You’re kidding.’

‘No way’ Christina grinned. ‘I am proud of myself actually, for finding Alicia I mean. He is quite an interested character too’ she tilted her head playfully at Kevin. ‘Isn’t he?’

‘Yeah’ Kevin laughed, ‘he sure is.’

The edges of Christina’s eyes crinkled then, and she looked away.

‘He almost looks better in a dress than I do’ Christina noted. ‘Almost.’

Kevin smirked at that quietly.

‘So, what did you find out?’ he asked again.

‘Oh, Alicia told me so many interesting things’ Christina began eagerly, continuing to work in the kitchen. ‘Justin is interesting, so very interesting.’

‘What did you find?’

Christina straightened, turning towards him with a cup of tea in each of her hands.

She took a seat beside him, putting the cups on the low table before them.

‘Let me start from the beginning’ Christina said, leaning back in the seat and crossing her legs seductively. ‘Now. Let me think.’

Kevin’s eyes drifted down her body, towards her legs, her naked flesh beneath her skirt, before his attention flickered back up to her eyes again

‘Well I guess it begins with what made Justin the way he is now’ Christina began, holding her knee with both hands as she leant back.

‘What do you mean?’

‘Have you not realised this yet?’ Christina asked tilting her head towards him. ‘He is afraid to love.’

‘How would I know that?’

‘He’s not fallen in love with you yet.’

‘You say *yet* as if it’s about to happen, plus I’m not even gay.’

Christina brought her fingers to her lips, running her main finger along her lower lip as she thought. She was clearly very amused by all of this.

‘He was very close to Alicia, because of his wild spirit, but Justin is afraid to love, because of his wife.’

‘Wait’ Kevin said raising an eyebrow. ‘He’s married?’

‘He was. She is his x-wife now. He had his heart broken, he changed forever after that. He developed a high sex drive afterwards, probably due to frustration...now he just enjoys it. Its who he is. Who he has become. But he will not love. Alicia is the closest thing he has had to true love since his wife left him.’

‘Oh my god’ Kevin said, putting his head in his hands. ‘I ruined that for him.’

‘Don’t feel bad. It wouldn’t have worked out in the long run’ Christina told him, ‘in the end...they were just’ she broke off for a moment as she thought, ‘too different.’

‘Is that what Alicia told you?’

‘Yes, it is.’

‘I still feel bad for...’ Kevin sighed, ‘what I did.’

‘You mean letting Alicia having his way with you?’

‘I didn’t know’ Kevin said in his defence. ‘I didn’t know I...’ he clenched his teeth then, swallowing the lump in his throat. ‘I didn’t mean to do anything bad, I didn’t mean to hurt anyone.’

‘That was part of the problem’ Christina told him. ‘Alicia could not be controlled, and Justin did not like that. It became more of a problem as time went on. But you changed that when you moved in to live with Justin. It was going to happen anyway, but you just pushed it to happen sooner. It was for the best.’

Christina ran her fingers through her hair.

‘Alicia was always convenient’ she said, ‘because Justin could be in a relationship with him and still keep the secret that he was gay. Alicia made such a convincing and beautiful woman. He still does.’

‘Why does he dress like that?’

Christian shrugged. ‘He just likes it. And hey, who are we to judge?’

‘I guess you’re right’ Kevin sighed.

Christina watched him closely, before bowing her head, straightening the skirt of her dress before sitting up again.

‘Are you still Justin’s plaything?’ Christina asked.

‘Yeah’ Kevin mumbled, speaking in a monotone. ‘I don’t know how I feel about it...I don’t really know how I got into this situation, things just sort of happened. It’s so bizarre.’

‘Do you enjoy it?’

‘I think so’ Kevin replied, without pause or hesitation in his voice. ‘Sometimes. It uh...it’s a bit intense at times.’

Christina looked ahead again.

‘I just wanted to find out more about him’ Kevin mumbled. ‘I’ve been living with him for so long now it feels. I know next to nothing about him still.’

‘He would be mad that you’ve been trying to pry into his personal life and find out about his past. Why did you want to know anyway?’

‘I was bored I guess?’ Kevin shrugged. ‘I don’t really know. The thing is I am so involved with him, yet so distance. I wanted to find more about him. That is all. Just because I can.’

‘Have you ever suffered a broken heart?’ Christina asked Kevin softly.

‘You know I have’ Kevin answered.

‘It is the worst pain I have ever experienced’ Christina uttered, hand going to her own heart as she touched her chest tenderly. ‘Whatever you have planned, I would not bring this up with Justin. He would be furious.’

‘I’m not stupid’ Kevin grumbled.

‘That is why he does not want to fall in love again, it’s because he fears it. It was a messy break up. His wife has moved on and they will never see each other again it seems, but he has never fully recovered, or so Alicia tells me.’

‘Maybe I should not have asked you to dig for me’ Kevin mumbled.

‘What did you expect?’

‘I feel like I am way in over my head’ Kevin admitted. ‘I don’t know how to get out of this situation.’

Kevin lay on his back, his wrists tied above his head, his legs spread. He was completely naked beneath Justin now, laying there submissively as Justin thrust into him, his movements aggressive and forceful. But this time Kevin could handle him.

Kevin stared at the wall, eyes glazed over, as he felt Justin deep inside him.

‘So where do you see yourself a few years from now?’

Kevin raised his head, staring at the caress advisor.

‘A few years from now?’ Kevin repeated, speaking in a mumble. ‘I... never really thought about it. I mean I used to....um....’ he trailed off, without finishing his sentence.

‘Is there anything you enjoy doing?’ the woman asked him, sitting opposite him in the quiet room. ‘Any goals you strive towards? Anything you wish to achieve?’

‘Not...not really’ Kevin answered, feeling suddenly empty. ‘I’m just...I thought I knew what I wanted.... but things did not work out.’

Kevin felt disjointed as he walked home later that day after school. He felt almost as if he were outside his own body, like he wasn’t himself anymore.

He had no work today, and so he headed straight home, wanting only to relax and withdraw into himself.

He went up in the lift, heading to the door at the end of the corridor.

He had barely closed the door when he saw Justin approach him from the other side of the room, having heard Kevin unlocking the door he had made his way over to it.

Justin didn't pause or hesitate, he pushed Kevin against the door forcefully, kissing him deeply.

'H-hold on' Kevin stammered. 'I just got home I...'

'No, I don't care' Justin hissed, 'I need to fuck you here and now.'

Justin forced him onto his knees. Kevin allowed himself to be shoved forwards, resting submissively on his elbows as Justin frantically unzipped Kevin's trousers.

Kevin could already feel Justin's hard-on push against him through his trousers.

Justin pulled Kevin's trousers down, unzipping his own.

Kevin bowed his head, gritting his teeth and whimpering as Justin forced himself in. It was difficult without lube, and it hurt Kevin, but Kevin did not protest, and Justin did not stop.

He fucked Kevin hard, right before the front door. Kevin groaning as he endured it, feeling Justin's thrusts deep within him.

He was savage, forceful. But Kevin didn't say anything. His body was tense the entire time until Justin finally came, letting out a sigh, before his body slumped.

Kevin allowed his body to relax a little, raising his head as Justin looked down at him.

'There's a good boy' Justin mumbled, before pulling out of him.

Kevin gritted his teeth as he did, straightening, his hands going to pull his trousers back up gingerly.

'Are you ready to eat?' he asked Justin, as behind him Justin rose to his feet.

'Yeah' Justin replied nonchalantly. 'I'll order food. I can have it sent to the door.'

They ate in silence at the table, the food brought to their apartment.

After that, they rested for a time, maybe an hour or so, before heading up the stairs to Justin's bedroom.

Justin placed the blindfold over Kevin's eyes slowly. He tied him to one of the posts of his four-poster bed, tying the rope around his body in intricate knots, forming shapes with the rope over his body. Kevin tilted his head back, moaning as Justin placed a bit into his mouth, a plastic piece that held his mouth open, forcing him to stay that way. Unable to close his mouth Kevin began to salivate, feeling it running down his chin and throat.

He moaned loudly then, Justin spilling hot wax from the candle he held over Kevin's chest.

Kevin let out a whimper, arms tied to the post behind him, unable to move. Kevin stood there, legs held apart by the thin metal bar attached to his ankles.

Justin slipped his fingers into Kevin's open mouth, feeling the saliva, bringing it to his own mouth and licking it off.

He knelt before Kevin, running his nails down the outside of Kevin's thigh briefly, but forcefully, leaving red marks and causing him to bleed.

Kevin made a sound of pain, his voice cracking, balling his fists behind his back. He was unable to speak because of the bit that held his mouth open in place.

Justin pleasured Kevin for a short time, caressing him between the legs oh so tenderly, causing him to stiffen, before slipping his mouth over him.

'Moan for me baby' Justin purred, and Kevin made a strangled cry as Justin at the same time, used a toy to shove up Kevin, doing so forcefully, the end he had already soaked with lube, so it slid in easily.

Kevin began to moan in pleasure as he felt both sensations.

Justin did to him as he pleased, working to his own rhythm. When he at last allowed Kevin to come, Kevin let out a groan, shoulders slumped then and head hung.

Justin wiped his mouth with the back of his hand, with the other hand, pulling the toy from out of Kevin, who was dripping clear liquid from between his legs.

Kevin gasped, shoulders rising and falling gradually.

Justin reached out to him, pulling free the knot that held him to the post.

He freed Kevin's legs then, forcing him to kneel.

'Now' he whispered dangerously to Kevin. 'I want you to take me.'

A drop of saliva fell from Kevin's chin then as he leant forwards, hands still bound behind his back.

Justin fucked Kevin's mouth, Kevin unable to close his mouth, choked and gagged as Justin did this to him.

But before he finished, Justin pulled back, pulling Kevin to his feet and pushing him back onto the bed.

He tied Kevin to the bed now, his wrists bound together and tied to the headboard, his legs spread eagled, his ankles tied to the posts of the bed.

Justin sat on his chest, thrusting into him again and again, but before he finished Justin pulled out again, jerking himself and shooting into Kevin's face.

Kevin turned his head to the side, coughing and spluttering, his breath coming in wheezes.

Justin sat back on his chest then, his body flecked with sweat, gasping deeply.

He bowed his head, looking down at Kevin beneath him, seeing tears running from Kevin's eyes and down his cheeks.

Justin reached forwards, taking the piece out of Kevin's mouth.

Kevin instantly closed his mouth gratefully, gritting his teeth together and groaning. He opened his mouth again, gasping deeply.

'Did you like that?' Justin asked him.

'Aw yeah' Kevin moaned. 'It felt so good.... master...'

Justin grinned cruelly down at him.

'You are learning well my Toy.'

He moved off Kevin then, crawling down the bed.

Justin untied Kevin's legs, lifting them up.

'I'm going to fuck you hard' Justin said. 'You are mine. You are mine to do with as I wish.'

Kevin did not speak, he just gritted his teeth, still unable to see because of the blindfold Justin still had not taken off.

He felt Justin pushing himself inside, throwing his head back, his back arched, as he let out a moan of pleasure.

### *The next day*

'Where do you see yourself years from now?'

'What?' Dean said to Kevin.

‘I went to see the career advisor recently’ Kevin said to his friend, they were hanging out at the skatepark now. ‘I was wondering how it went for you guys.’

‘It went fine’ Dean said, leaning back against the chain-link fence behind him. ‘It was kinda boring.’

‘What did she say to you?’ Kevin asked his friend, as they watched the skaters in the park.

‘Just generic stuff’ Dean shrugged.

‘Oh, come on’ Kevin pressed.

Dean turned to him, standing with his hands in his pockets.

‘What do you want to be?’ Kevin asked his friend. ‘What do you want to do once you leave school?’

Dean frowned thoughtfully before replying.

‘I want to be a marine biologist’ Dean said to Kevin. ‘I love the sea.’

‘Hu’ Kevin said.

‘What about you?’ Dean asked.

‘I don’t know really’ Kevin admitted. ‘I have no idea.’

‘Too bad’ Dean smirked.

‘Hey Jack!’ Kevin called out to his friend then who was skating around.

Jack skidded to a stop.

‘Did you talk to the career advisor?’ Kevin asked him.

‘Yeah why?’

‘Do you know what you want to do after you leave school?’

‘I want to be a graphic designer’ Jack replied.

Kevin felt a sinking feeling in his heart.

‘What about you?’ Jack asked Kevin.

Kevin shrugged carelessly, looking away reluctant to answer.

‘I don’t know’ he forced himself to say. ‘I haven’t decided yet.’

Kevin went back to the place he called home after that, to Justin’s apartment. And just as it had been so many times before, Justin leapt on him the moment he walked through the door, as if he had been waiting for Kevin.

Kevin naked now, rested on his hands and knees.

He bowed his head, lowering himself onto his elbows, on the bed.

‘P-please’ he moaned to Justin, who was fully clothed behind him. ‘No more...I’m full.... I can’t...’

Justin grinned down at him slyly.

Justin pushed the anal beads a little further, causing Kevin to moan again. Justin cupped him between the legs, caressing him gently.

‘Does that feel good?’ Justin purred.

‘Y-yes’ Kevin groaned, through gritted teeth. ‘It feels so good.... master.’

Justin took the end of the string of beads, pulling them slowly out of Kevin.

Justin pulled Kevin into an upright position now, resting on his knees. Kevin was unable to resist, his wrists handcuffed together.

‘You are mine’ Justin whispered into his ear. ‘You will obey my every command.’

‘Yes’ Kevin breathed, ‘yes master....’

Justin pushed Kevin back onto his front, leaning over him now  
Kevin let out a whimper of pain as he felt Justin push himself into him.  
He was so sore by now, but Justin did not stop.

## Chapter Twelve

### Closing Cage

Kevin was becoming more exhausted as the days went on. He was becoming mentally drained, and physically drained, and as he went about his day, at work, at school, at home, he felt almost like he was in a dream-like state. Almost as if he were living someone else's life. He was getting so worn, but he hardly seemed to notice, hardly seemed to think about it, as if he were living in autopilot.

'Are you getting enough sleep?

'What?'

Christina took the tray from Kevin, piled with dirty glasses, handing him another tray of drinks.

They were at work now, Kevin had been in school all day, afterwards he had walked to his work with Christina.

'You look exhausted' Christina told him.

'So do you' Kevin retorted.

'Yeah but I'm always tired' Christina replied. 'Now go and take those drinks to your friends.'

'My friends?'

Kevin glanced around, seeing three of his friends sitting at one of the tables, talking together.

'Hurry up' Christina said to him flatly.

Kevin turned, carrying the tray of drinks to his friends.

'Hey Kevin' one of them smiled as he approached.

'Hey guys' Kevin replied, placing the tray of drink on the table and handing each their own.

'How are you doing?' his other friend said, 'you look tired.'

'Yeah, I'm great' Kevin sighed wearily, straightening up again. 'Can I get anything else for you?'

'Nah we're good' his friend said. 'Hey did you hear about Anastasia?'

'No?'

'We saw her with this guy' his friend grinned at him. 'We went to speak to her, she has a boyfriend now.'

'Oh really?' Kevin said perking up a little. 'That's great.'

'You're not bothered by that?'

'Why would I be?' Kevin replied.

'I thought you would get together' his friend Sean said to him. 'You two would make such a great couple.'

'You're joking' Kevin said flatly.

'I don't know why you don't want her' Kurt said to him, adding more sugar to his coffee and stirring it. 'You never know what you want, you're always so indecisive. Hey, maybe that's why you didn't do so well in your career advisor meeting thingy.'

‘What?’

‘That’s what your problem is’ Kurt said to him. ‘You never know what you want. How can you get what you want when you don’t know what it is?’

‘Hu’ Kevin replied.

‘So, are you going out with Christina instead?’ his other friend Felix said to him.

‘Yeah no. And I wish you would stop asking me that. You know we’re just friends.’

‘That’s funny’ Felix said loudly to him.

‘Is it?’ Kevin mumbled, blinking tiredly.

‘What happened to your wrists?’ Sean asked.

Kevin pulled his arm back then protectively, pulling his sleeve down to cover his wrist.

‘Don’t bother’ Sean said, ‘I already got a good look. Why do you have those marks around your wrists? You know what that looks like? It looks like you were tied up. Are you into some kinky shit? The look on your face says yes.’

Kevin gritted his teeth, glaring at Sean.

‘Is that why you’re so tired?’ Kurt asked him.

‘I work a lot, you know that’ Kevin replied defensively.

‘So, you haven’t heard the rumours beginning to spread about you?’ Felix said to him.

‘What rumours?’

‘People are starting to notice certain things’ Felix went on. ‘The way you tease girls but don’t have a girlfriend, ‘how close you are to Christina but not going out with her either, even though she’s totally hot, and the fact that you’re living with that guy. Justin is it? The superstar. The model.’ Felix grinned slyly at Kevin, leaning forwards on his elbows. ‘People are starting to say that you’re gay.’

‘What?’

‘I heard that too’ Kurt said.

‘And me’ Sean added.

‘You’re serious’ Kevin asked flatly.

‘Are you gay?’ Felix asked him.

‘No’ Kevin said sharply.

‘I think doth protest too much.’

‘Shut up Felix’ Kevin snapped.

‘So, do you have a girlfriend?’ Sean asked Kevin.

‘No.’

‘Are you having sex with a girl right now?’

*Only Christina* Kevin thought to himself.

‘No.’

‘So, you basically admitted you’re gay’ Sean said to him. ‘If you’re not with a girl, then how did you get those marks on both your wrists, like you were tied up?’

‘That is bullshit’ Kevin mumbled under his breath, doing so loud enough so that only they could hear him.

‘Then who bit you?’ Kurt asked.

Kevin moved to lift his collar then, acting subconsciously. The marks Justin had left on him. There were more beneath his clothes, on his chest, belly, around his thighs.

‘Waw’ Felix gleamed happily. ‘So, you’re gay now, and by the look of it you’re the submissive. Haha. I’m going to tell everyone. That’s the real reason you’re so tired all the time. He must be an animal. So, it’s the guy you’re living with then? I suppose he does have a pretty face. I didn’t realise it would turn you gay though. I’m telling everyone.’

‘Don’t’ Kevin snapped.

‘Why not?’

‘Because I’m not gay.’

‘Are you having sex with Justin?’ Kurt asked.

The others fell silent, waiting for a response.

Kevin said nothing.

‘I guess that confirms it’ Sean said.

‘If you start telling people that Justin and I are fucking, that will get him into a lot of trouble’ Kevin told them.

‘Waw’ Felix smirked. ‘You basically just admitted it.’

‘Leave Justin out of this’ Kevin said angrily to him under his breath, trying to remain calm at work.

‘So what’s it like?’ Sean asked Kevin.

‘Why don’t you try it?’ Kevin said to him. ‘We could meet up later and I’ll show you how it’s done.’

Sean spluttered in shock then, beginning to laugh.

‘So it’s true! Oh my god I had no idea you liked dick.’

‘Careful I don’t think the entire restaurant heard you’ Kevin said to him calmly. ‘Also, my boss didn’t hear. Could you repeat that louder please?’

‘No?’ Sean grinned.

‘I don’t care what you tell people about me. I don’t care for rumours. Just leave Justin out of this.’

‘Do you love him?’ Felix asked.

‘No way’ Kevin replied. ‘I just don’t want him to get into trouble for this. If he finds out people know then I’ll be kicked out. I need a place to live.’

‘We won’t mention Justin then’ Felix grinned at him.

‘Anything else I can get you?’ Kevin asked.

‘Just the bill.’

‘Of course.’ Kevin walked away from them.

By the time his shift finished, it was dark outside. Kevin made his way through the town, heading back to the home he shared with Justin.

‘There you are’ Justin said the moment Kevin walked through the door.

Kevin stopped for a moment, standing in the doorway with his hand still on the handle, staring back at Justin, who remained seated.

Kevin waited for a moment, expecting Justin to ravage him. But this time, he remained seated.

Kevin closed the door.

‘Long day?’ Justin asked.

Kevin moved across the room, eyes fixed on Justin.

‘What’s for dinner?’ Kevin asked.

‘Actually’ Justin said, leaning forwards with his elbows on his knees, ‘you’re going to cook tonight.’

‘What?’

‘Yes’ Justin smiled. ‘I want you to cook for me.’

‘Why?’

Justin grinned then. ‘It would please me’ he answered simply.

Kevin swallowed then, gritting his teeth.

‘You sighed a contract’ Justin reminded Kevin. ‘I want all of you, your body and your mind. I want to.... own you.’

‘Why?’ Kevin asked again. ‘What is your obsession with control?’

‘It brings me pleasure’ Justin replied.

‘That is what chased Alicia away.’

Justin’s expression immediately began to darken then.

*Should I say it, should I continue?* Kevin thought to himself.

‘Why do you have to bring him up?’

‘I just thought it was fun.’

Justin rose to his feet, he approached Kevin, his demeanour menacing.

He stood over Kevin, glaring down at him.

‘You want to play games with me?’

‘What?’ Kevin answered quickly.

‘Are you trying to piss me off?’

Kevin felt a twinge of nervousness inside him suddenly.

‘N-no’ he fumbled, ‘I....’

‘Never mention Alicia in front of me again. Never mention him again. Do you understand?’

‘I.... yes.’

Justin stepped back, turning and walking away. He resumed his place, sitting back on the sofa.

‘I uh...I’ll cook then’ Kevin spoke enthusiastically, trying to ignore what just happened, leaning forwards and hunching his shoulders, holding his hands behind his back. ‘What did you get?’

‘Pasta’ Justin replied shortly. ‘I think you could manage that. Have you cooked before?’

‘Yes of course’ Kevin said, speaking more confidently than he felt at that moment. ‘I cooked at home before. I’m not that bad.’

A short time later and Kevin was just dishing up the pasta having drained the water.

He glanced up at Justin briefly who read a magazine, still sitting on the sofa, waiting for Kevin to finish.

Things really are changing for me Kevin thought to himself as he put the dirty dishes in the sink. I really am becoming like Toy...so much like him...

‘It’s ready’ Kevin spoke happily, and Justin glanced up.

Kevin carried both plates over to the table, placing them down.

‘Looks decent’ Justin commented as he took his seat at the table.

‘Oh, thank you so much’ Kevin grinned, speaking eagerly.

Kevin waited until after Justin was seated and comfortable, before sitting down himself.

‘Bon appetite’ Kevin gleamed.

Justin glanced up at him, giving him a level expression.

‘Thank you’ he replied shortly

They began to eat, Kevin waiting for Justin to start first, before lifting his own fork.

‘That wasn’t bad at all’ Kevin sang happily once they had both finished eating. ‘I actually really enjoyed it.’

‘I’m glad’ Justin said, rising to his feet and moving over towards Kevin as he began to clear away. ‘I’m glad you are happy about it.’

He came up behind Kevin then, shoving him forwards over the kitchen counter.

‘H-hang on...’

‘No’ Justin hissed. ‘I can’t hold on any longer...I’m still hungry.’

Kevin gritted his teeth, resting on his front as behind him Justin fumbled at his clothes.

Kevin let out a cry of pain, feeling Justin push inside him forcefully, thrusting hard.

He began to gasp and moan as Justin had his way with him.

When Justin was done, Kevin straightened, breathing heavily.

His hand went down, pulling his trousers back up.

‘Ach’ Kevin grimaced, lifting his hand to his head. ‘Shit’ he hissed. ‘I really am becoming like Toy.’

‘You don’t like it?’

Kevin turned to face Justin who stood behind him.

‘It’s not that.’ Kevin mumbled. ‘It’s just.... ugh....so exhausting.’

Justin began to chuckle in amusement.

‘Did that feel good?’ Kevin asked him.

‘What do you mean?’

‘Why do you act this way? It’s like you never tire.’

‘I just know what I want’ Justin said. ‘And...you’ve not known the true me.’

Kevin narrowed his eyes at that.

‘Did Alicia know the true you?’

Justin’s expression changed, it was only very subtle, but Kevin noticed it.

*I should stop speaking* Kevin thought to himself, *I should stop*.

But he carried on.

‘That’s why he left, because you were too much for him.’

‘Shut up’ Justin spoke quietly.

‘I know why you act this way. It’s because you’re frustrated, you’re still upset about your wife.’

Justin grabbed him suddenly without warning, holding him roughly by the shirt.

‘Where did you hear that?’

‘Let go of me.’

‘Where!?’

Kevin faltered then, glaring back at Justin, a little afraid now. ‘I... Alicia said so.’

‘What?’

‘He told a friend of mine.’

‘Christina?’

Kevin swallowed, gritting his teeth.

‘I asked her to find out more about you’ Kevin sneered at Justin. ‘Because I was bored.’

‘You were bored?’

‘Yes, I’m bored!’ Kevin yelled back. ‘I’m bored of this routine. It’s boring!’

Justin narrowed his eyes, gritting his teeth, tightening his grasp on Kevin’s shirt.

‘You want to know why my wife left me?’ Justin spoke dangerously to him.

‘No’ Kevin said shortly. ‘I don’t care.’

Justin let go of Kevin slowly, pushing him back.

Kevin rubbed his chest, glaring back at him.

‘Did Alicia like all the things you did to him?’ Kevin asked him. ‘You said you like it rough. How rough?’

‘You really want to know?’

‘Yes, I do’ Kevin said straightening up then, standing tall. ‘I’m tired of this routine. I want to find out what Alicia experienced. Why was he so different?’

‘He wasn’t’ Justin said. ‘He grew tired of me too.’

‘You love whips and chains?’

‘Not for me’ Justin said simply. ‘For others.’

‘And do you miss abusing people?’

Justin began to laugh.

‘Did Alicia let you beat him?’ Kevin asked.

Justin just let out a sigh.

‘Yes’ he replied. ‘He.... enjoyed it. But...only very occasionally.’ Justin scratched his chin thoughtfully. ‘I had to give him time to heal.’

‘Oh my god.’

‘So, you want to step it up?’ Justin asked. ‘You’re bored of the way things are?’

‘I can’t stay here forever’ Kevin said, ‘one day.... I will be gone from here.’

‘In any case’ Justin said. ‘I am not happy you thought it was appropriate to pry into my personal life.’

‘I was bored.’

‘Well’ Justin purred then, eyes shining bright. ‘Maybe we can liven things up a bit.’

Justin threw Kevin onto the bed, tearing his clothes off.

‘You’re not going to blindfold me?’ Kevin gasped as Justin leaned over him, trapping him beneath him.

‘I want you to see what I’m going to do to you’ Justin whispered, caressing Kevin’s cheek tenderly, before getting off him and moving over to the drawers.

Kevin propped himself up on his elbows then, laying on the bed completely naked, watching Justin with a little trepidation, as Justin pulled out some ropes from the drawer.

‘What are you going to do?’ Kevin asked him, his voice wavering a little.

‘I’m not going to tell you’ Justin replied, moving over towards him. ‘That would spoil the fun, for me anyway.’

Kevin flinched as Justin grabbed him by the wrist, pulling him into a stand.

Kevin opened his mouth, but did not speak.

He closed his mouth again, swallowing the lump in his throat as Justin tied Kevin's wrists high up on the posts of the four-poster bed, Kevin was facing the bed itself.

'Don't move' Justin breathed, grasping Kevin around the thigh as he knelt behind him.

Kevin flinched as Justin bit him hard, sinking his teeth into his flesh. Kevin drew a sharp intake of breath, relaxing then as Kevin let go of him, he let out a sigh.

Justin ran his hand up Kevin, hand moving to between his legs, slipping his fingers into him and playing with him.

Kevin let out a gasp, tilting his head back.

On his knees behind him, Justin glanced up at him, before his grip tightened.

He pulled his fingers out of Kevin, grabbing his ankles and pulling them apart, one after the other and tying them to the posts of the bed.

'J-Justin?' Kevin wavered. 'What are you doing?'

Justin did not answer. He rose to his feet, moving away from Kevin and back towards the drawers. Kevin was completely immobilised.

Kevin looked over his shoulder, watching Justin closely.

His hearted tightened in his chest when he saw Justin bring out a whip.

Kevin began to panic, struggling against his binds.

'Shhhh' Justin whispered, coming up behind him, hand curling around his throat, and below his jaw, his touch was soft and tender. 'Don't fight me' Justin whispered into his ear, 'don't resist.'

Kevin began to tremble, his breath in shallow gasps as he slowly turned to face ahead of him, his body beginning to sweat.

'Justin...?'

Justin took a step back.

'Justin!'

Justin cracked the whip, and Kevin threw his head back, crying out in pain.

It was agonizing, a great cut across his naked back.

Kevin bowed his head, beginning to sob.

Justin whipped him again.

Kevin screamed again, as the pain coursed through his body.

'JUSTIN PLEASE STOP!' Kevin begged him.

But Justin only hit him again.

Kevin's eyes watered from the pain, his hands contorted as he tried to struggle, but he was tied too tightly to the bed.

There was no way for him to stop this, and Kevin's pleas fell only on deaf ears.

Just as it had been first time Kevin had said 'yes', Justin did not stop until he was done.

Kevin could not remember much after that, or how many times Justin hit him, not until it was over.

Justin untied Kevin's wrists, bending him forwards and over the bed. He moved to stand behind him, leaving his ankles tied to the posts of the bed, legs spread.

Kevin could not hear as Justin unbuckled his belt, he only felt when Justin pushed into him, thrusting hard. But despite Justin's size, Kevin barely noticed this sensation. All he felt now was the pain in his back, his skin was in agony, it felt like it was on fire. And in his head, all he could hear was the blood rushing and his heart beat in his ears.

When Justin was finished with him, he pulled out, untying Kevin's ankles and allowing him to sink to his knees.

Kevin held his head in his hand, sobbing and shaking with shock, body trembling all over.

'Never do that to me again' Kevin uttered, forcing himself to speak at last, tears of pain rolling down his cheeks.

Justin only stared down at him without compassion, silent as he stood there looming over him.

Afterwards, Kevin leant over the kitchen table downstairs, still completely naked, as Justin washed the blood away from his back, doing so ever so tenderly.

'It will heal quickly' Justin said to him, speaking in a quiet voice. 'These aren't so bad.'

'It hurts so bad' Kevin rasped through gritted teeth. 'It stings.'

'You'll be fine.'

Kevin groaned as Justin pressed the wet cloth again to him, dabbing at his skin.

He washed the wounds in the kitchen sink that was filled with water. The water was pink now.

'What's wrong with you?' Kevin rasped. 'Did you do this to Alicia too? To anyone before?'

'Yes' Justin answered shortly.

'Why?'

Justin did not answer. He began to dry the wounds now, using a new cloth.

'The bleeding had stopped now' Justin said. 'You're going to be fine. I'll cover it to keep it clean.'

'I just don't know what to do' Kevin sighed, sitting at the table in the café with Christina, but not in the same one that they both worked in.

'You did ask for it' Christina told him simply. 'Sorry but you get no sympathy from me.'

Kevin laughed humourlessly. 'You're a real bitch sometimes.'

'I'm just speaking the truth.'

'I just don't know what to do.'

'Yeah you said that.'

'At least pretend like you care' Kevin scoffed.

'I do care.'

'The thing is....' Kevin went on, 'the longer I stay, the harder I feel it's going to be to leave.'

'Maybe you won't be able to leave' Christina added. 'Unless he kicks you out.'

'What?'

'Oh, I have some bad news for you' Christina said casually to him, lifting her cup of coffee.

'You've been fired.'

‘What?!’

‘Keep your voice down’ Christina replied carelessly, before taking a sip from her cup.

Kevin let out a breath.

‘What do you mean I’ve been fired?’ Kevin asked Christina quietly now.

‘Well....’ Christina began.

‘Get to the point.’

‘It was Justin’ Christina said. ‘He made a complaint about you. They’ve let you go because of it.’

‘What did he say?’

‘He said you made him uncomfortable, he said you were trying to touch him, and were chatting him up.’

Kevin stared at Christina in disbelief.

‘He’s never even visited the restaurant’ Kevin spat angrily.

‘Yeah I know’ Christina mumbled, staring at her coffee. ‘This is really nice’ she mumbled under her breath. It’s a tad too sweet though.’

‘ARE YOU FUCKING KIDDING ME!’

Justin flinched as Kevin slammed the door. He glanced up as Kevin stormed up to him and slammed the paper down on the table.

‘You got me fired. My contract has been terminated.’

‘Oh waw’ Justin said calmly, leaning forwards and picking up the paper, reading through it quickly. ‘Oh waw’ Justin said again. ‘It says here you were flirting with customers. That’s very inappropriate behaviour in the workplace. No wonder you got fired.’

‘Are you fucking kidding me!?’ Kevin howled at him again, snatching the paper back from him. ‘You lied! You just lost me my job.... wait...’ Kevin faltered. ‘Why did you do this? Are you...’ Kevin broke off. ‘You’re trying to trap me here’ Kevin realised. ‘You...wanted this.... you wanted me to be fired. You wanted me to say here.’

Justin rose to his feet, staring at Kevin with a calm and relaxed demeanour, but there was something else there too behind his eyes.

## Chapter Thirteen

### A Sudden Turn of Events

‘What are you trying to do?’ Kevin glowered. ‘Why would you do this? What’s wrong with you?’

Justin turned to face Kevin.

‘You’re trying to control me’ Kevin snapped. ‘You know how dependant on you I am already, but it’s not enough for you is it?’

‘Does it bother you that I am jealous?’

‘You what mate?’ Kevin made a face.

‘You’re right’ Justin replied. ‘I want you all to myself.’

‘Because what I give you already is not enough.’

‘Kevin...’

‘How could you do this to me? I’m not your toy. I’m not your plaything. I give enough of myself to you already as it is! My life is my own. How would you like it if I started interfering with *your* life? How would you like it if I told everyone the truth? How would you like it if I told everyone what you’re really like?’

‘Don’t you fucking dare.’

‘Why not?’ Kevin snapped. ‘After what you’ve done to me?! I won’t allow myself to be trapped here like this.’

‘Kevin!’

But Kevin ignored him, turning and heading back towards the door.

‘Where are you going?’

‘I’m leaving’ Kevin retorted, without looking back. ‘I’m getting out of here.’

He reached for the door but was grabbed suddenly from behind before he could touch it.

‘Let go of me!’

‘No’ Justin hissed, pulling Kevin backwards and towards the stairs. ‘I won’t have you telling people my secret. I have a reputation to hold.’

‘You should have thought of that.’

Kevin began to fight with him, struggling to free himself from Justin’s hold.

‘Let me go!’

‘No!’

‘*Let go!*’

Kevin gasped as Justin grabbed his face then, hand over his eyes so that he could not see.

Kevin felt himself being dragged backwards, feeling the bottom of the step as Justin pulled him up the stairs.

‘Where are you taking me?!’ Kevin howled.

They were nearly at the top of the stairs now.

‘I’m going to teach you a lesson.’

‘No!’

Kevin broke free from Justin’s hold suddenly, wheeling around, Justin still holding onto his sleeve.

Kevin slipped, falling backwards.

He hit his head.

The next time Kevin woke, he was lying on his back.

He woke gradually, slowly coming to consciousness.

It took him only a short time to realised, he was lying on a bed.

He felt a weight upon the edge of the bed, and turned, seeing Justin sitting there, watching him closely.

Kevin tried to move, but he could not.

His arms were tied above his head, ropes around his ankles held his legs apart, tying him to the posts at the bottom of the bed.

Kevin tried to pull his arms to him, but the ropes were tight. He was gagged also; the soft velvet cloth muffled his cries as he tries to talk. Kevin was completely naked.

‘You won’t be getting out of that’ Justin told him calmly, as upon the bed Kevin glared at him with hate and anger in his eyes. ‘No need to look so glum.’

Kevin tried to speak, struggling against the ropes.

‘Don’t even try’ Justin said to him calmly. ‘You won’t get out of that. Not without my help.’

Justin reached for him then, touching the side of his head gently. Kevin flinched.

‘You hit your head pretty hard’ Justin mumbled, his voice soothing. ‘I didn’t mean for you to hurt yourself like this. I.... I just wanted you to...’

Justin drew his hand back.

‘I don’t want you to leave me’ Justin spoke carefully. ‘I never realised...’ he said, ‘how important you were to me. Not until you were about to leave me.’

‘Mmmmmphhh.’

Justin began to laugh at him.

‘I love your body’ Justin continued, running his finger down Kevin’s bare chest, down his belly, and between his legs, ‘it’s so flawless.’

Kevin tensed then as Justin grasped him tightly, holding for a moment, before releasing him.

Kevin let out a moan.

‘It’s almost as if’ Justin spoke carefully. ‘I actually care about you.’

Kevin glanced to Justin then as he rose to his feet, crawling onto the bed and bearing over him. ‘I didn’t mean for that to happen’ Justin said to him, as beneath him, Kevin glared angrily up at him. ‘I just...I didn’t mean to turn so physical. I just didn’t want you to leave. I panicked.’

‘Mmmrrphh.’

‘I want to show you’ Justin purred, caressing Kevin’s cheek then, ‘though I love to see you in pain...it gives me pleasure.... but.... I want to make you feel good too.’

Kevin closed his eyes, body tense as he felt Justin move down the bed, and further down his body.

Kevin let out a moan, muffled by the gag, opening his eyes now and staring upwards as he felt Justin grasp him around his thigh, his tongue running up the inside of his leg to between him.

Kevin moaned again, shifting on the bed slightly, as he felt Justin’s breath upon him, his mouth, his saliva.

Kevin’s body began to relax then as Justin put his mouth around him, moving back and forth. It felt good, Kevin began to moan in pleasure, then in pain, as Justin began to claw his flesh, doing so hard enough to make him bleed.

Kevin tried to speak, wanting to beg Justin to stop. But the gag muffled his voice.

‘What’s wrong?’ Justin asked, pulling back from Kevin then and looking into his eyes. ‘You want me to stop?’

Kevin stilled, his breath in shudders as he looked down at Justin who leant over him again.

‘I could have you, you know’ Justin said. ‘I.... could have you, right now, and you would not be able to stop me. You would not be able to say no.’

Kevin calmed his breath, controlling himself, willing himself to remain calm.

‘I never realised’ Justin continued, reaching up to caress Kevin’s cheek again, ‘how much I cared for you. Not to say I love you but....’ he broke off then. ‘You are very important to me.’

He grinned cruelly then, his grasp tightening around Kevin’s leg as he bowed his head.

Kevin groaned in pain as Justin sunk his teeth into the tender flesh of his inner thigh, leaving there a mark, before moving up his body again, putting his mouth around him.

Caught between these two sensations, Kevin’s mind was fraught as Justin toyed with him, first going one way, then the other, constantly swinging from between pain and pleasure.

Kevin gritted his teeth as he came, throwing his head back, body tense.

Justin immediately stopped, breathing carefully.

He leant back then, coughing into his hand as he sat up, resting on his heels as Kevin began to sob.

Justin smiled to him, reaching towards him again, this time, pulling the gag free from him.

‘How did that feel?’ Justin asked him.

‘Let me go.’

‘I’m not done with you yet’ Justin replied. ‘I want to hurt you a little.’

Kevin gasped suddenly as he felt Justin’s nails running down his ribcage, leaving behind red marks. Blood began to speckle from the scratches.

Justin began to lick him then, running his tongue up his belly and biting his chest. Kevin gritted his teeth to stop himself from crying out.

‘I love it when you are helpless before me.’

‘Let me go.’

‘I could have my way with you’ Justin said to him again. ‘I could put it in you.... if I wanted.’

‘You won’t’ Kevin gasped. ‘Because you don’t have my consent.’

Justin’s brow furrowed ever so slightly, his eyes shining in amusement.

He bent down again, one last time, licking the inside of Kevin’s thigh, moving closer to between his legs.

‘You won’t rape me’ Kevin spoke calmly, feeling Justin’s tongue against his skin. ‘I know you won’t. It’s not in you.’

‘You think so?’ Justin asked, untying one of the ropes around Kevin’s ankle, and lifting his leg over his shoulder, biting his calf tenderly now.

‘I know’ Kevin said. ‘Because you need consent.’

Justin raised his head.

‘You won’t do it’ Kevin breathed calmly. ‘You won’t do it. Not without my permission.’

Justin purred then, running his hands up and down Kevin’s legs tenderly.

‘You’re right’ he said. ‘I would never go against your will. I.....need you to say *yes*.’

Kevin gleamed a slow smile. ‘I know...’

Justin’s hand moved down his own body then, touching himself. He began to moan.

Justin moved around Kevin now, kneeling beside Kevin.

Kevin turned his head to face him, seeing Justin exposed before him. With only his ankle free, he was unable to move, the rest of him still tied, holding him down onto the bed.

Justin began to work himself, Kevin watched, until Justin came, doing so across Kevin’s face.

Kevin turned back to him, his face dirty.

Justin let out a sigh, body slumped now. He reached towards Kevin, using the gag to wipe his face.

‘I just can’t get enough of you’ Justin spoke quietly. ‘You are just.....so good for me.’

Justin untied Kevin from the bed, allowing him to sit up.

‘Where are my clothes?’ Kevin asked immediately.

‘You won’t be needing them anymore.’

Kevin tensed upon hearing these words.

‘.....What?’

‘I want you to stay here.’

‘You want to keep me prisoner? I have to go to school.’

‘No’ Justin said to him calmly leaning towards him and taking his wrist in his hand. ‘I want you to stay here.’

Kevin heard the click of a lock then and glanced down at his wrist, seeing handcuffs.

Justin locked the other cuff to bar of the bed before Kevin knew what was happening.

‘You can stay here.’

‘You’re kidding’ Kevin said to him flatly, not bothering to resist. The handcuffs were already closed.

‘I will bring you food.’

‘You can’t keep me here.’

Justin rose from the bed, turning and moving away.

‘Justin!’

He closed the door without a backwards glance.

## Chapter Fourteen

### Breaking Free

Christina stood outside the school gates, lingering there for a time, waiting for Kevin, but he did not show.

She tried to call his mobile, but as it had done before, it went straight to voicemail.

Christina pocketed her phone. She turned and made her way to her first class.

Kevin lay on his back, Justin was on top of him, thrusting into him hard, again and again. He hooked his arm around the back of Kevin’s leg, lifting it upwards, pushing deeper into him.

Kevin moaned.

Justin had him this way for a time, before flipping him over, bearing over him again.

Justin reached for the bedside table, grabbing the thing there and lifting it.

He positioned himself behind Kevin, pushing into him.

Kevin grimaced.

Justin reached forwards and placing the bit into Kevin's mouth. He pulled the reins back, jerking Kevin's head backwards forcefully, continuing to thrust inside him. Kevin grimaced, feeling pain deep inside him, gritting his teeth, his eyes watering.

Justin let out a final moan, coming at last, before relaxing his grip on the reigns.

Kevin let out a breath, his body slumped forward as Justin pulled out of him.

'Where are my clothes?' Kevin asked him again, as behind him Justin straightened, getting off the bed and zipping himself up.

Kevin was still handcuffed to the bed, unable to leave, save for the few times Justin released him to allow him to eat and use the bathroom. All the while Justin watched over him, before returning him to this room, and locking him to the bed again.

'Oh, you won't be needing your clothes anymore' Justin told him casually. 'I threw them away.'

'You what?'

'I want you to stay here' Justin said to him. 'I will provide for you.'

'I can't stay here my whole life' Kevin argued, the feeling of trepidation growing in his chest.

'I.... I have to go out. I have to go to school and..... see my friends.'

'Maybe' Justin answered, '.... some other time.'

'You have to let me go.'

'I don't think so' Justin replied, turning away from him. 'I will bring you your food later.'

'I'm bored!'

'I'll bring you a book' Justin replied with a grin of amusement. 'How's that?'

Kevin glared at him.

'You cannot keep me here.'

'I will' Justin said. 'Just for a while.'

He walked out the room then, without another word.

Kevin stayed there for hours, the time dragging by. There was no clock on the wall in this room but Kevin could see the sky through the gap between the curtains. The sky was getting darker. It was getting late.

The skin around Kevin's wrist was getting red and sore now, as he struggled to find a way to free himself, moving awkwardly around the bed.

He froze suddenly, glancing towards the door as he heard muffled sounds.

Kevin listened silently, like a frightened animal, like prey. He stared at the door transfixed.

There were voices. Two voices. One of them was Justin's, the other voice Kevin did not recognise.

Kevin remained standing there for a moment beside the bed, listening closely.

He could not hear what was being said, but by the sound of it they were staying downstairs.

Kevin let out a breath and returned his attention to the bed. He continued to work, unscrewing the bed, and pulling it apart in places, in order to free himself.

‘Thank god at last’ he gasped to himself a time later, overcome with relief as he finally was able to break free.

He was able to move around the room freely now, heading over to the drawers and looking for the tiny key to the handcuffs. He unlocked them, putting them carefully down on top of the drawers, so as not to make even the slightest sound.

Kevin glanced back towards the door, hearing the muffled voices from downstairs continuing.

When he moved over towards the bedroom door and cracked it open, he saw what he suspected.

Downstairs, Justin was with another man.

Kevin saw them through the crack in the door, he watched as Justin had his way with this new man, hearing his voice as he moaned. But the other man was out of sight, hidden from view by the back of the sofa.

Kevin stepped back, closing the door softly so as not to make a sound.

He drew back into the room, heading over to the drawers again and taking some of Justin’s clothes, putting them on. He had been naked for so long, he had begun to feel uncomfortable.

It felt strange now wearing someone else’s clothes.

He moved back towards the bed then, sitting down upon it and staring at the door, hearing the sounds continuing from downstairs.

He waited.

It was probably many hours later. It was fully dark outside, and everything downstairs was silent now.

Kevin rose from the bed.

He pressed his ear to the door, listening hard, but hearing nothing.

## Chapter Fifteen

### Jane

Kevin leant against the door as he waited for the right moment to escape, his body feeling strange now that he was wearing Justin’s clothes.

When the right moment came, he moved slowly, opening the door carefully so as not to make a sound. He moved across the floor, stepped gingerly down the stairs, seeing the figures of Justin and the other man lying on the sofa together fast asleep, their naked bodies covered

only by a blanket. It was dark, and Kevin could not see the other man's face clearly, but he did not hang around to get a closer look.

Kevin moved away, stepping quietly towards the front door, never taking his eyes off the pair in case they were to wake.

He took his mobile from the kitchen counter as he went, pocketing it before heading towards the door and opening it slowly.

He slipped through, closing the door quietly behind him, then breaking into a run towards the lift.

His heart was pounding in his chest, palms sweating as he stood before the elevator, waiting anxiously for the lift to arrive.

The wait felt like a lifetime.

'What are you doing here? And where the hell have you been?'

'Can I come in?' Kevin asked Christina patiently, standing before the door of her apartment.

Christina hesitated for an instant, glancing over her shoulder.

'What's wrong?' Kevin asked.

'You can come in' Christina said, 'but I have a guest.'

'I .... I'm sorry but...'

'Just come in' Christina said stepping back to give him space, 'and be on your best behaviour.'

'I always am' Kevin frowned at her as he stepped in.

She closed the door behind him.

'Those aren't your clothes.'

'I'll explain about that later' he replied shortly.

She turned away from him.

'Come and meet my friend.'

Kevin followed Christina into the next room, entering the tiny kitchen to see a young woman sitting at the table, her eyes were red with tears.

'Hey Jane' Christina spoke with a smile. 'This is my friend Kevin.'

'Hey' Kevin replied, giving her an awkward wave.

Jane glanced up. She was a small figure, about the same age as Christina, with rose-red dyed hair and dark eyes.

'I'm sorry' Jane mumbled, dabbing at her eyes with a tissue before looking back up at Kevin.

'I must look a mess.'

'Yes, you do' Christina said loudly.

Jane began to chuckle at this.

Kevin glanced from Christina to Jane and back again.

'I've just been helping Jane with some man troubles.'

'More issues with men' Kevin sighed at Christina. 'I guess men are just bad.'

'Not you though' Christina answered sweetly before turning her attention back onto Jane with a smile. 'Kevin has been a good friend of mine for years' she said to her.

'Oh.' Jane mumbled, straightening up a little, 'I remember you talking about him before.'

Kevin shifted a little uncomfortably at that. 'I don't want to get in the way.'

'It's ok' Jane said, 'I trust you if you are a friend of Christina's.'

'So...' Kevin mumbled. 'What's going on here?'

'You remember that guy I was dating years ago?' Christina said to Kevin.

Kevin froze then, staring back at her, before his expression darkened.

'Him?' Kevin said darkly. 'I thought that was the last we would hear of him.'

'Sadly not' Christina groaned. 'Would you like some more tea?' she said to Jane.

'Oh yes please' Jane smiled then. 'Thank you.'

Christina dipped her head with a smile, beginning to bustle around the kitchen.

Kevin took a seat at the table beside Jane.

'It's nice to finally meet you' Jane said to him. 'I'm sorry I look like such a mess.'

'Its fine' Kevin smiled. 'And I've been friends with Christina for years. We've been through a lot together. Things have been difficult at times.'

'You're telling me.'

'So, what has that dick-bag been doing this time?' Kevin asked her. 'Christina was only with him for a short time, but that was traumatic enough. I remember her coming to my house in the middle of the night many years ago. She had bruises on her neck.'

'Yeah' Jane said. 'She told me. And she told me how much you helped her.'

'She stayed with me for a few days after that' Kevin mumbled. 'My parents let her stay. She made her own way after that, free from him, though it took a long time to shake him off. He stalked her for ages afterwards, even threatened *me*. The guy was crazy.'

'He's still taking the drugs?' Kevin asked Jane.

'So, you know about that' Jane mumbled sadly.

'Of course I do' Kevin replied sadly. 'You know I wonder what he would be like if it weren't for the drugs. The guy's a mess, he's paranoid and violent...'

'I know' Jane sighed. 'He...he hurt me.'

'Not too bad I hope.'

'I.... I've been talking to Christina about this, and we're taking him to court.'

'Really?' Kevin replied in interest.

'Yes' Jane answered. 'He...is horrible, but I cannot get away from him, not easily anyway. He had secluded me, cut me off away from my own friends and family. I am completely alone.' She began to cry again as she spoke. 'I'm not allowed to leave the house, he rings the house phone every single hour just to check I'm still at home. I'm not allowed to invite friends over, I'm not allowed to even have a mobile or to go on the internet, he asks me questions about everything all the time and has to know everything I do or even think.... yet he is allowed to leave me in the house alone for hours on end. I'm not even allowed to work, yet he is allowed to hang out with his friends and come back drunk, and he hits me.... even when he's sober.....and in the middle of the night....' She broke off then, swallowing the lump in her throat. 'I'm not allowed to say anything to him. It's always me. I'm always in the wrong. He left fresh meat out the other day, in the kitchen, I said it was bad because...well its obvious' she continued, 'and he.... oh, we just.... got into a massive argument about it. And he...was angry at me for...you know silly things like.... Not being pretty, not plucking my eyebrows, or shaving my legs. I have to be ready for him all the time.... *all* the time. I've

known how horrible this is for so long but.... I was not able to get away, not until Christina was able to help me. She knew about him and...well.... she found me.'

'Jane is staying with me for a short time' Christina told Kevin, moving closer towards them and giving them each a cup of fresh tea. 'I'm not allowed tenants but...this is different. I'll give my reasons if anyone asks.'

'Thanks' Kevin sighed, taking the mug from Christina. 'Just how I like it.'

He put the mug on the table, leaning back in his chair.

'That's so good of you to help her' Kevin said to Christina.

'I'm helping Jane take him to court' Christina explained. 'It needs to be done.'

'Don't get yourself in trouble' Kevin said to her.

'It needs to be done' Christina repeated. 'I don't want him doing this to anyone else. I should have been the last.'

Jane let out a slow sigh, holding the mug of tea before her with both hands.

'So, what about you?' Jane asked.

'Me?' Kevin answered uncertainly.

'It looks like you've been through something yourself.'

'Is it really that obvious?' Kevin asked glumly.

'Kinda' Jane laughed awkwardly. 'I knew the moment I saw you.'

'It's ok' Christina said to him taking a seat beside him at the table, taking a sip from her mug.

'You can trust Jane, she can keep a secret.'

Kevin pursed his lips then, turning back to Jane.

'For the last few weeks and months' he said to her, 'I've been staying with this guy.... living in his apartment' Kevin explained. 'I.... I'm adopted. My foster parents have always been good to me, but I wanted to move out and make my own way in life. I hate depending on people, so I found a place to stay.' Kevin smiled weakly to himself then, running his thumb across the rim of the mug. 'It was pure chance that we found each other' Kevin went on, 'but it was a good place to stay...at first.'

Jane listening to him silently as he spoke.

'I paid rent with what little money I saved up, but I needed a job.' Kevin swallowed the lump in his throat. 'Things changed, one thing led to another and.... I ....'

'Go on' Christina smiled warmly at Kevin, leaning forwards on her elbows.

'He and I began to have sexual relations' Kevin finished. 'I don't love him, I never have. We don't have feeling for each other. It's purely physical. But...' he frowned. 'He did say recently, that he had began to develop feeling for me, when I tried to leave he...he said he realised that he actually cared for me.'

'Strange' Jane mumbled. 'Go on. What else?'

'Well, things began to...you know over time...become more intense...more violent.'

Kevin let out a sigh, holding his hands together before him, reluctant to speak, though he forced himself to continue.

'He whipped me. I still have wounds on my back. He likes to hurt me. It gets him off. We got to a point where I was no longer paying money for rent to stay with him. He wanted my body now.' Kevin let out another sigh. 'I...tolerated it for a time, even when he whipped me, and the other things he did to hurt me. But I can take no more. My world has become too small around him. I want to go out and see my friends, expand my horizons. But in my life now, all

it's been about is him. He wants my body.... all the time. His appetite.....I've never known anything like it. I'm sorry' Kevin smiled then glancing up at Jane then. 'I didn't mean to go on.'

'It's ok' Jane waved at him. 'I find sharing makes you feel better about things. It gets it off your chest you know?'

'Yeah' Kevin laughed. 'Its just been hard lately. I was thinking of maybe moving on from him and finding another place to stay, I've been working to save money in my job but...he had me fired.'

'How did he have you fired?' Jane asked frowning.

Kevin laughed humourlessly.

'He told my boss I was coming onto him at work...making him feel uncomfortable, inappropriately touching him. It's ridiculous.'

'And you were fired for that?'

'This guy knows a lot of people' Kevin shrugged. 'He's well known. It was easier to fire me than to offend him.'

'Bastard!' Jane declared.

'Yeah' Kevin scoffed. 'Tell me about it.'

'So, what are you going to do now?' Christina asked him. 'And where have you been all this time? You were gone for like a whole day. You weren't answering your phone.'

'Oh my god' Kevin sighed then tiredly. 'You wouldn't believe what I've been through.'

'Tell me.'

'I tried to leave' Kevin answered. 'He wouldn't let me. I tried to get away and...I fell and hit my head. Next time I woke up.... the next thing I knew.... I was tied to the bed. He...'

'Go on' Christina prompted, staring at Kevin intently.

'He wouldn't let me leave' Kevin finished shortly. 'I...was only able to escape when.....he let his guard down. Then I came here.'

She stared at him, pursing her lips and frowning suddenly. It was clear she wanted to hear more details, but did not press him, not now, not yet.

'You said you hurt yourself' Christina said to him. 'You said he whipped you.'

'Yeah' Kevin mumbled.

'Can I see?'

Kevin gritted his teeth.

'Lift my shirt' he spoke quietly to her.

Christina rose to her feet, moving carefully around Kevin and touching him at the bottom of his back. Justin had since removed the covers over the wounds to let them heal better, and they were clearly visible beneath his clothes.

Christina lifted his shirt gently.

'Oh my god' she whispered.

Kevin bowed his head.

Hours later, Christina went out to buy them all food. Kevin and Jane stayed behind in the apartment together. They talked and got to know each other. Kevin quickly decided that he liked her very much, and she too seemed fond of him.

‘I’m glad what I said before didn’t put you off or anything’ Kevin mumbled awkwardly.

‘No, its fine’ Jane smiled at him, averting her gaze then. ‘Life is crazy, and things get difficult for everyone from time to time.’

‘I guess’ Kevin smiled.

‘So, um.... are you gay then?’

‘No’ Kevin answered quickly and clearly. ‘I just thought I’d try it out.’

‘Really?’

‘Yeah’ Kevin replied. ‘Its fine. It was nice but.... sometimes it just got a bit brutal. Nah’ he said waving her away. ‘I like girls most of all.’

‘You’re weird’ Jane giggled then.

‘Thanks?’ Kevin frowned at her in amusement.

‘No problem.’

‘I’m glad you’re smiling now.’

‘Yeah, Christina told me how caring you were.’

‘She did?’

‘Yes. She also told me about the kind of relationship you have together.’

‘She did?’ Kevin repeated, raising an eyebrow.

‘Yeah’ Jane laughed then. ‘I never had a friend with benefits.’

‘Oh waw’ Kevin said, resting his chin on his palm. ‘She really did tell you everything didn’t she?’

## Chapter Sixteen

### A Far-off Memory that’s like a Scattered Dream

‘What are we doing here again?’ Kevin asked Christina, standing outside the house with his hands in his pockets.

‘It’s a party’ Christina told him flatly, her arm hooked around Jane’s. ‘You said you wanted to expand your world.’

‘Yeah, I guess’ Kevin mumbled, kicking his feet.

It was late, and the garden around them was bustling with people, the murmur of overlapping voices sounding all around them as the guests talked and laughed together. Kevin glanced to the side as one of the rowdier party goers fell off a table in his drunkard state, his friends around him laughing, one of them filming on a mobile.

‘There’s drinks inside’ Christina told him, walking forwards with Jane beside her. ‘I don’t know about you, but I’m going to get completely smashed. And don’t’ worry’ she added, patting Jane’s hand then, ‘I’m not going to leave your side.’

‘Thanks’ Jane mumbled shyly, ‘I don’t want you to leave me.’

Kevin watched then as Jane leaned towards Christina, kissing her on the cheeks. Kevin did not react to this.

He followed the two girls into the house and was soon consumed by the party.

There were drinks, and Kevin helped himself, getting to meet the people around him as Jane and Christina went off together.

The light was dim in the house, and Kevin was aware of only very few things around him. He was in the living room now, and on the sofa beside him there were several people smoking, the room filled with smoke. Kevin breathed in the fumes, beginning to feel a little dizzy as the sensation washed over him. He leant back against the wall with the drink in his hand.

‘There you are’ Christina said, reaching him now as she made her way through the crowd. ‘I thought I lost you for a minute. I thought you might have gone home.’

‘I don’t have a home’ Kevin mumbled to her. ‘My parents moved away remember? And I can’t go back to that rapist.’

‘What?’ Christina laughed at him. ‘He never raped you. You said *yes* remember?’

‘He tied me to the bed.’

‘Oh waw is this the truth coming out?’ Christina gleamed at him. ‘I like this. What else did he do to you?’

‘Ach’ Kevin gripped his head painfully. ‘I need to control myself.... not to talk....ah.’

‘Waw you’re so drunk’ Christina said flatly. ‘Why don’t you come to the kitchen with me?’

‘Where’s Jane?’ Kevin mumbled.

‘She’s standing right beside me.’

‘Oh hey’ Kevin suddenly spotted her. ‘Sorry I didn’t see you there.’

Jane smiled at him in silent amusement.

‘Come on’ Christina said to Kevin, taking him by the arm and pulling him gently after her.

‘There’s food in the kitchen, and water in the tap. Both of those would help you clear your head a little.’

‘Mmmokaaay.’

It was bright in the kitchen, and Kevin had to shield his eyes.

‘How do you feel?’ Christina asked him, turning to him and handing him a cup of water.

It was crowded in the kitchen; the room was only small.

‘I’m fine’ Kevin gasped, bringing the cup to his lips. ‘Have you not been drinking?’

‘Not as much as you’ Christina replied.

Kevin let out a breath, putting the glass down heavily on the counter and struggling to see Christina clearly before him. It was loud in the kitchen also, bodies close all around.

Kevin spoke.

‘You look really nice by the way.’

‘Thanks’ Christina answered sarcastically.

‘Do you want to.... fuck?’

‘Not here’ Christina said flatly. ‘I’m going outside now. You concentrate on not being sick.’

‘I’m not that drunk’ Kevin replied, but she was already gone.

Kevin let out a sigh, leaning back against the counter, head bowed.

He stayed at the party for hours, his head eventually clearing. And then he met a young woman, with beautiful long dark hair and a slender frame.

He pushed her against the wall, kissing her passionately as she held onto him, grasping his hair tightly.

They went upstairs together, Kevin pushing her back onto the bed, consumed by a sudden strong lust, hungry for her body. He held her head in his hands as he kissed her, moving down her body, biting her neck and shoulders and chest, moving further down to her belly, hearing her moan as his hand moved over her thigh.

He grabbed the top of her skirt, pulling it down, throwing the skirt and pants to the floor.

He moved his head to between her legs then, using his tongue, making her moan.

She arched her back, grabbing the pillows behind her, gasping.

Kevin straightened, hand going to himself, unzipping his trousers.

He bore over her, pushing himself carefully in as she reached for him, grasping onto him tightly as he pulled back a little, pushing himself into her more forcefully this time.

She moaned beneath him, clawing at his back beneath his shirt.

Kevin grimaced in pain as her nails ran across the wounds that were there, slapping her hands away sharply one after the other and holding her down, his hands around her wrists. He pinned her to the bed.

He leant forwards, biting her chest again, licking and sucking her.

The muffled music from downstairs continued to play, the sound from the other partygoers outside.

Kevin thrust into her again. It felt so good to do this. It felt so good to be the one leading, after all this time.

Kevin went downstairs after that, meeting a young man he had not seen in the longest time. It was pure chance that they ran into each other on this night.

‘Alex’ Kevin breathed. ‘What are you doing here?’

The young man called Alex stared back at him in surprise, at first unable to answer.

‘Kevin...’ he mumbled. ‘You’re here.’

They stared at each other for a few moments.

Kevin dipped his head.

‘Do you want to talk?’ Kevin asked.

Alex swallowed then, glancing away.

‘Yeah’ he spoke quietly. ‘Lets...lets go outside. It’s a little too crowded in here.’

They left the home, taking with them some cans of beer.

Kevin and Alex walked away from all of the noise, coming to a stop within a small patch of trees on the edge of the park a short distance from the home. From here, the lights from the party could still be seen, the music clear through the night.

‘I’m actually glad to see you again’ Alex mumbled, sitting on a tree-stump as Kevin turned to him. ‘I thought I wouldn’t see you ever again. It’s almost like fate.’

‘Tonight is the night’ Kevin said to him, ‘isn’t it. It’s her anniversary.’

Alex straightened slightly, staring at Kevin with eyes wide, shining with tears.

*Kevin reached out to her, extending his hand for her to take. She touched his palm lightly, stepping up onto the wall of the bridge to stand beside him, glancing down at the drop below.*

‘How have you been coping these last few years?’ Kevin said to Alex.

‘Ha’ Alex breathed. ‘It’s um.... it’s been hard.’

Alex drew a slow breath, calming himself.

‘But I uh....’ Alex let out a sigh. ‘It’s been....it has been a while now and.... I still think of her.... I still miss her.’

‘I know how much it hurts’ Kevin spoke quietly. ‘I...I loved her.’

‘I know’ Alex smiled. ‘She spoke about you often, all the time in fact and.... ha...’ he laughed again. ‘I was sick of hearing about you. She loved you. She would have done anything for you, she could have carved out her own heart for you if you asked her to.’

Kevin stared down at Alex calmly.

‘It’s still been....um....’ Alex swallowed. ‘It’s still been a difficult.... it’s been...’ he sighed then, struggling to speak as his emotions threatened to overcome him.

‘It’s ok’ Kevin spoke softly.

‘I.... it’s just so hard’ Alex whispered, not trusting his voice. ‘I loved her. I still do. She was my entire world and....’ He let out another breath. ‘I still sometimes.... I think about her so often. And uh.... sometimes I forget she is gone. I see her out of the corner of my eye sometimes, I dream of her. My parents...they have not touched her room in all this time, it’s still just as she left it. I think that...it’s just so unfair. I had a difficult time, tried to take my own life.’ Alex closed his mouth, gritting his teeth. ‘But I found that that was not the way. She would have wanted me to live. I just miss her so much, the sight of her face, her smile, her silly sense of humour.’

Kevin continued to watch him without reaction.

‘I’m glad we met tonight’ Alex said to him. ‘It’s given me some uh.... peace of mind.’

Kevin nodded slowly.

He approached Alex, sitting on the ground before him with his legs crossed.

‘There was a time’ Kevin spoke slowly, ‘that I thought I would spend the rest of my life with her, despite her troubles...there was something about her that made her different from all the people I’ve met before. She was special.’

‘She always saw the world differently’ Alex whispered. ‘She could never relate to any person outside her own family, save for you.’

Kevin smiled weakly, feeling a tug in his heart.

‘I never blamed you’ Alex said to him, ‘not once. You were there for her. You saved her. And I wanted to thank you.’

‘I only did what was right.’

‘No one else would do what you did. That is why she loved you.’

They returned to the party sometime later, after talking for over an hour, catching up on times gone by. Alex had sunk into a deep depression, and struggled to accept what had happened, and to move on with his life. Only now, was he beginning to move forwards.

The rest of the night was a blur for Kevin, as he continued to drink. He remembered Christina again, trying to lift him to his feet as he lay back on the sofa, he remembered the dark-haired girl from earlier that night. But most of all he remembered the room spinning.

He dreamed of a still night, a bridge in a woodland park, the stars overhead shining brightly in the cloudless night. It was cold, and as Kevin walked, he walked with a young woman by his side.

Kevin opened his eyes, the dream lingering in his mind for a time.

He sat up gingerly, hand going to his head, groaning.

Around him were several people sleeping on the other sofas, and Alex on one of them.

Kevin stared at Alex groggily, blinking slowly, his mouth felt dry and tasted foul.

The dream he had woken from, quickly became a scattered memory.

## Chapter Seventeen

### Rachel

‘So, what are you going to do now?’ Alex asked him.

It was later on in the day, about midday, and Kevin and Alex had left the home where the party had taken place. The aftermath had been such a contrast to the night before. It had been a great night. In the house they had recently left, everything was so empty and peaceful, compared to the noise and chaos the night before.

‘What am I going to do now?’ Kevin repeated. ‘I um.... I don’t know.’

‘You said you have nowhere to stay now, after that thing happened with that guy.’

They continued to walk. Kevin had told Alex what had happened, but he left out all the detail. He left out who the man was, the sex, everything that mattered.

‘I guess I could stay with Christina’ Kevin mused to himself, mumbling under his breath.

‘...No, I can’t.... she’s got a friend staying with her.’

Kevin began to get increasingly worried now.

‘My parents have moved away. I.....don’t really have anywhere to stay now..... shit.’

‘You can stay with me’ Alex offered.

‘Are you sure?’ Kevin asked uncertainly.

‘Yeah. I mean I still live with my parents but.... they know you. They wouldn’t mind. You can sleep on the couch.’

‘Aw thanks man’ Kevin breathed a sigh of relief. ‘You’d really be saving me. It won’t be for long I swear.’

‘That’s ok’ Alex said.

‘I just....’ Kevin swallowed the lump in his throat. ‘Things are just a bit weird right now. I don’t have any plans for anything. I’m just sorta floating right now. I need a place to stay.....aw shit I just remembered....my job.’

‘Yeah what happened with that?’

‘The guy I was staying with complained about me and got me fired.’

‘That’s terrible.’

‘I really needed that job’ Kevin lamented. ‘I...maybe if I talk to my boss and explain myself, I could get it back. I haven’t spoken to him since my last shift.’

‘It’s worth a shot’ Alex shrugged. ‘Nothing you can lose by trying.’

‘Maybe if he hears my side of the story’ Kevin mumbled to himself. He cursed then. ‘That fucking jerk, why did he have to do this?’

‘Why *did* he do this?’

‘I don’t know...he....um.... mmmm it’s hard to explain. I was living with him for not that long and...thing got a little complicated.’

Alex faced ahead again, walking slowly alongside Kevin as they made their way along the street.

‘Life is so complicated.’

‘Can I meet up with you later?’ Kevin asked him then, slowing to a stop. ‘I.... got some things I have to do.’

‘Sure’ Alex mumbled. ‘I’ve got to go anyway. My parents are probably wondering where I am.’

‘You didn’t tell them you were staying out?’

‘No’ Alex turned back to him. ‘I just.... they don’t know where I am half the time. I gotta go anyway’ he broke off without further explanation. ‘You know where I live. We’ll meet up later? I’ll tell my parents you’re staying.’

‘Yeah’ Kevin nodded. ‘Thanks again. I’ll see you later.’

‘See you.’

Kevin gave a nod, turning and walking the other way. Alex watched him go.

He met with his boss later that day, trying to explain to him. He spent a long while in the office talking, leaving sometime later.

‘How did it go?’ Christina asked him as he slouched by.

‘Oh, it’s you’ Kevin mumbled. ‘It went ok.’

‘Did you get your job back?’

‘Ah’ Kevin breathed, scratching the back of his head tiredly. ‘I don’t know. He said he’d think about it. The thing is he knows Justin, he’s sort of siding with him. I’m worried he’s just going to do whatever Justin wants.’

‘Why did he want you fired again?’ Christina asked him.

‘Are you tired?’ Kevin asked her, avoiding the subject.

‘Yes, I was up most of the night and so were you’ Christina grumbled at him. ‘Who was that girl you were with?’

‘It doesn’t matter’ Kevin said. ‘I gotta go.’

‘Where are you going?’ Christina asked.

‘Today is a special day for me.’

‘What is it?’ Christina spoke quietly.

‘I.....do you remember Sarah?’

Christina hesitated.

‘Oh’ she mumbled. ‘Is today the day?’

‘Yeah’ Kevin spoke. ‘I just need to be alone today.’

‘I understand.’

Kevin left the restaurant, walking slowly through the town to a place far away, on the edges of the town. Along the way he made a detour, heading to a flower shop. He bought a single white rose, carrying it before him, holding it to his lips gently.

He was distant from the rest of the world, detached. His mind was far away.

It took him a long time to walk to where he was going, well over an hour.

And then he came to the place.

He reached the edge of the small section of woodland, pausing and glancing back at the streets and roads behind, before looking ahead again and walking the path.

It was a beautiful day. Not sunny and bright, but peaceful in a different way.

It was cloudy, and there was a sort of stillness in the air. Or perhaps it was that Kevin was not a part of this world right now, and as he walked forwards, he saw that the place around him, had no other people.

A grey squirrel ran across his path, scurrying out of sight. The area here was flat, the trees grew far apart from one another, and as Kevin continued to walk onwards, the trees grew just a little denser.

And then he came to the bridge.

It was a long stone bridge, the path running along it was completely level with the ground.

Beneath the bridge itself, was a very shallow river, where the water ran slowly, and the vegetation was thick and overgrown.

The drop was very high.

Kevin stopped at the edge of the bridge, glancing up towards the sky.

It reminded him so much of that day. Kevin felt a sudden strain on his heart, his throat was tight then, and he blinked back tears.

‘It’s not changed here’ he uttered, ‘not in all this time.’

He stepped onto the bridge.

Kevin remembered the last time he had been here, it had been with her.

He had not visited this bridge again, not since that day.

‘It’s time I came back’ Kevin said. ‘I should have done this sooner.’

He stopped at the centre of the bridge, turning towards the left side, where he had stood with her last.

‘Sarah...’

He extended his hand over the drop then, letting go of the flower, and letting it sail gracefully down to earth, landing in the shallow water of the river below and being carried away by the gentle current.

Kevin sat upon the wall of the bridge, swinging his legs over the drop and leaning forwards with his head bowed, elbows resting on his knees.

He sat there for the longest time, a darkness filled his heart.

‘It was on this day’ Kevin spoke to the air, ‘exactly three years ago, that your body was found.’

He swallowed the lump in his throat, burying his head in his hands then, his breath coming in shudders.

‘It just isn’t fair’ he whispered. ‘It isn’t fair. Why....? Why did this have to happen? Why did you have to die, to suffer as you did.....? *It just isn’t fair...*’

He hugged himself, grasping his arms tightly, nails digging into his flesh.

Kevin breathed slowly through his mouth, blinking back tears.

‘I was going to marry you’ Kevin uttered. ‘I thought you were the one...and you would have been....’ He broke off sharply then, eyes becoming distant. ‘It just isn’t fair...’

Kevin stayed here for hours, well after it had fallen dark.

His mobile began to ring in his pocket.

Kevin took out his mobile.

It was a text from Alex.

Kevin scrolled through the message, the light from the screen illuminating his face.

Kevin closed the phone, getting up off the wall and straightening up.

He walked back down the path, heading through the now silent town, lit now only by the dim street lights overhead.

Kevin walked through the town for hours, heading the opposite direction, towards a housing estate.

There were not streetlights here, and Kevin used what little light shone through the clouds from the moon overhead to see his way.

All the houses here looked identical, and it took a while for Kevin to find the right place. But eventually his memory came back to him, and as he approached the driveway of the home, he saw the front door open, and Alex standing in the doorway, the light from the kitchen shining behind him.

‘There you are’ he said. ‘I thought you wouldn’t show up.’

‘Its fine’ Kevin answered dismissively.

‘Are you hungry?’ Alex asked him, standing back and allowing Kevin to enter. ‘We’ve just started eating.’

‘Yeah’ Kevin mumbled, turning to look back at his friend, walking with his hands in his pockets. ‘I can’t remember the last time I ate a proper meal.’

He entered the kitchen, seeing Alex’s parents there.

‘Hello Kevin’ Alex’s mother said. ‘It’s been a long time.’

‘It has’ Kevin replied. ‘Hello, it’s nice to see you again’ Kevin said, addressing both parents now.

‘How have you been?’ Alex’s father asked him.

Kevin thought back to the last three years of his life, and how much had changed in that time. As he thought about it, he realised how little had actually changed.

‘Things have been fine’ Kevin replied. ‘Things have been.... the same.....’

Days passed, and Kevin continued to stay with his friend in his home, but he had begun to feel trapped very quickly. He spent every moment he could outside, not wanting to stay in the home unless he had to. He stayed overnight to sleep, leaving as soon as he could in the mornings, tidying the sofa before doing so, without even having breakfast much of the time. He had no possessions now, having left what little he owned back at Justin’s apartment. All he managed to grab as he crept out of the apartment, was his phone and his wallet.

That was all he needed.

After the first night staying with his friend, he went out alone to buy some new clothes and a few other things. The next day, he attended school.

‘So how’s it going?’ Ryan asked him as Kevin approached his group of friends. ‘What’s happening with you nowadays?’

‘Nothing really’ Kevin grumbled, dumping his bag on the ground and sitting on the wall by his friends.

‘You look like hell man’ Luke comments, drinking from his can as he stood leaning back against the wall. ‘Are those new clothes and a new bag?’

‘Yeah’ Kevin huffed.

‘Is it true you got fired from your job?’ Ryan laughed at him.

‘It’s not funny man’ Kevin scowled.

‘Sorry but we heard rumours that you were hitting on a guy’ Ryan sniggered at him.

‘They’re just rumours.’

‘Was it that guy you were living with?’ Luke asked him.

‘What difference would that make?’

‘Is it true you’re gay?’ Ryan asked him.

‘No, it’s not true, and I’m not having this conversation anymore’ Kevin spoke firmly.

‘So, what are you going to do for work now?’ Luke asked.

‘Gonna start looking for a new job’ Kevin mumbled. ‘I guess that what I’m going to have to do.’

‘Too bad you can’t get your old job back’ Ryan said.

‘He’s still thinking about it he says’ Kevin said kicking his feet. ‘I don’t know if he will take me back. But I can’t rely on him, I need money. And I need a place to stay, I can’t stay with Alex for long, it would be unfair on his parents.’

‘Why don’t you stay with Christina?’ Luke asked him.

‘She’s going through some things right now.’

‘You could always go back with your parents’ Luke said.

‘They moved away remember?’

‘Oh yeah I forgot.’

‘Have *you* got any work right now?’ Ryan asked Luke.

‘Nah mate’ Luke shook his head. ‘I’m still looking.’

Luke and Ryan began to talk together for a time, Kevin listening only half-heartedly, staring away at the grounds of the school around them, the buildings around, the students playing football in the open field, groups of friends walking together.

Kevin was brought out of his trance as his mobile began to buzz in his pocket.

‘Who’s that?’ Ryan asked, lighting a cigarette.

‘Aw man its Rachel again’ Kevin groaned, staring at the screen.

‘Isn’t that the girl you fucked at that party?’ Luke asked him.

‘Yeah’ Kevin said distractedly, scrolling through his phone. ‘She wants to meet with me. Dam she’s persistent. I gotta go you guys.’

‘Good luck.’

They both sniggered in amusement at Kevin as he made his way away.

Kevin met Rachel outside the gates of his school.

‘Baby!’ she cried immediately upon sight of him, running through the gates and embracing him tightly. ‘I missed you.’

‘Rachel what are you doing here?’ Kevin replied calmly.

‘Why are you talking to me like that? I wanted to see you’ Rachel replied sullenly now, letting go of him. ‘I missed you. Where have you been?’

‘Nowhere in particular, just doing thing you know?’

She frowned at him, before stepping closer, tilting her head slightly before kissing him.

Kevin felt her soft lips upon his own. Kevin was unable to stop himself, and he reached to grasp her firmly then, holding her tightly by the hair with one hand, his other hand holding her waist as he kissed her passionately.

‘Stop’ he mumbled, pushing her back suddenly.

‘What’s wrong?’

‘I just...sorry.’

Rachel hesitated.

‘When do you finish school?’ she asked him.

‘We’re not going out you know.’

Her expression darkened slightly, and she clenched her jaw.

‘Why are you being so cold to me?’

‘I’m not being cold.’

Rachel stepped back silently, bowing her head.

‘I thought you cared about me.’

‘I didn’t say I didn’t care about you’ Kevin said.

Rachel glanced up at him again.

‘I just don’t want to get into a relationship.’

‘Why not?’

‘Because....’ Kevin let out a sigh, frowning at her. ‘There was someone I cared about before’ he answered quietly. ‘But she died...’

‘Was she your girlfriend?’

‘Yeah’ Kevin said. ‘I thought I would spend the rest of my life with her. I truly believed that but.....’ Kevin broke off then, feeling his throat tighten.

He gave Rachel a sad smile then.

‘You never know what will happen in life’ he said to her. ‘I just...don’t feel....’

‘What?’

‘I feel incapable of loving anyone’ Kevin admitted. ‘Not since the day she died. The only person I care about is my friend I grew up with. Lisa.’

Rachel frowned at him, thinking then.

‘Can we go somewhere together?’ she asked him.

‘What for?’

‘I just...like your company’ she said. ‘I.... I love you.’

‘You shouldn’t say that. You shouldn’t...feel anything for me.’

‘What are you afraid of?’ Rachel asked him suddenly. ‘Is it that you’re scared you will lose someone again?’

‘I guess’ Kevin shrugged none committedly, shoving his hands in his pockets.

‘You shouldn’t focus on the past’ Rachel said to him. ‘How will you live then and look to the future?’

Kevin stared at her blankly, unable to think of a reply.

‘Come out with me afterschool’ Rachel offered him again. ‘It won’t do any harm will it?’

## Chapter Eighteen

### Corry

Kevin walked with Rachel through the town, heading to the outskirts with Rachel close by his side.

‘Ah, it’s so pretty out here’ Rachel gleamed. ‘I love this town so much.’

Kevin glanced over towards her, walking slowly with his hands in his pockets.

‘Have you lived here long?’ she asked him.

‘I’ve lived here pretty much all my life’ Kevin replied, speaking in a mumble. ‘I uh...I feel kinda stuck here right now’ he laughed awkwardly.

‘What do you mean?’

‘I want to travel the world’ Kevin smiled warmly towards her. ‘We live only one life, and I want to get out there...the thing is uh.... I just don’t really know what exactly I want to do. I don’t really have any plans in my life, no clear goal.’

‘Oh, that’s a shame’ Rachel smiled at him. ‘I want to be a photographer, but my parents don’t like it.’

‘Why not?’

‘Well I originally told them I wanted to be a nurse’ Rachel replied, holding her hands behind her back and kicking her feet playfully. ‘But it was totally weird’ she smiled, ‘I was sad one day because well.... I was having trouble with my stepfather. I ran away one day after we fought about something. I can’t even remember what we were fighting about, but I remember the day. It was raining and...’ she tucked a strand of her long black hair behind her ear, Kevin watched her as she did this, and he thought then of how beautiful she was. ‘I took my phone out and took some pictures’ Rachel went on, ‘just because I felt like it. And it’s totally weird,

but it made me happy. It was raining, but the clouds looked so beautiful on that day, and the water droplets on the leaves in the park were so pretty.'

Kevin reached out to her, touching her hair briefly.

'What are you doing?' she asked uncertainly.

'You had some dandelion fuzz in your hair' he smiled.

'Oh' she said blushing then. 'S-sorry.'

'It's nice that you have something that you want to do. You shouldn't let other people discourage you.'

'That's really sweet of you to say so' Rachel gleamed.

'It's nice that you know what you want to do in life' Kevin said. 'My parents encouraged me to do many different things, but I never really.... you know....' Kevin shrugged. 'I never knew what I wanted to do. Well I did but...'

'What is it?' Rachel prompted, as they continued to walk along the quiet path in the park.

'Well, my parents moved away now so I am kinda on my own. I gotta fend for myself. I'm kinda lost right now, but there was a time a few years ago, when I knew exactly what I wanted.' He paused, frowning to himself at the memories that lingered in his mind. 'I thought I would get married. I met someone who I thought I would spend the rest of my life with.' He trailed off. 'But things were not meant to be. She suffered greatly with mental health issues, she was depressed and...um....' He swallowed the lump in his throat, scratching the back of his head. 'She had a terminal....um....' he smiled then, letting out a sigh and dropping his hand. 'It was just very difficult' he breathed, slowing to a stop at the centre of the bridge they were crossing. 'She died right here' he said, glancing to his side, looking over at the forest before him. 'Since that day, things have never been the same. I had my whole life planned out, a life with her. But that was all taken away from me.'

'That's why you don't want to commit?' Rachel asked him curiously.

'Yeah' Kevin smiled weakly, bowing his head and closing his eyes. 'Something like that.'

Rachel moved away from him, walking over towards the wall and glancing over the edge.

'It's pretty here' she mumbled, 'so sad....'

Kevin's mobile began to buzz in his pocket then, and he pulled it out, seeing he had received a text. It was from Justin.

### **Where are you?**

Kevin's heart sunk in his chest as he stared at the screen. The text read nothing else.

'Hey' he said glancing past his phone and looking toward Rachel. 'Why don't we go out tonight?'

'What?' she said, glancing back at him curiously.

'I want to go wild. I want to forget about all the bad things. I want to *live*.'

Rachel straightened up, moving away from the wall. She chuckled at that, her voice and laugh were so beautiful.

'That sounds like a great idea' she beamed. 'Where do you want to go?'

Kevin tilted his head back to the canopy overhead, seeing the first stars beginning to shine in the cosmos.

The light was failing, it was getting late.

‘It’s going to get dark soon’ Kevin mumbled. ‘I’m sorry I made you walk all this way.’

‘It’s ok’ Rachel gleamed. ‘I enjoyed the walk. Plus I had great company.’

*God she sounds so much like Anastasia.*

‘If you don’t mind walking back’ Kevin said, ‘we could go out to a club together.’

‘A club?’

‘Only if you don’t mind.’

Rachel smiled, looking ever so beautiful.

‘I don’t want to go home and uh...’ Kevin went on, ‘well it’s been far too long since I’ve been out. I want a bit of excitement.’

‘Oh, that’s so cool’ Rachel said clapping her hands. ‘I’d love to go. I’ll invite some friends.’

‘That’s cool. I could ask Christina if she wants to come.’

‘Who’s that?’ Rachel asked, less enthusiastic now, a little suspicion in her voice.

‘She’s just a friend’ Kevin replied flatly, typing away feverishly on his mobile.

‘A girlfriend?’

‘Nah’ Kevin said clicking *send*. ‘I could never have her as a girlfriend. She’s not my type. Not in that way. She’s just a friend.’

‘Cool.’

Kevin frowned at Rachel at that response.

‘Come on’ he said, pocketing his mobile and reaching out to take Rachel by the hand.

As he had with Anastasia, he made it clear he did not want a relationship, but still would tease girls with touches and the occasional kiss. And it always caught them off guard. He knew exactly what to do, and how to toy with them. Because it was fun.

‘There’s a club on the edge of the town’ Kevin grinned slyly at her. ‘It’s not far from here. How do you feel about that one?’

‘Oh, you mean the lava Lounge?’

‘That’s the one’ Kevin winked.

‘I like that one.’

‘Then let’s go’ Kevin said playfully, pulling her along.

‘Oh’ she gasped, suddenly flustered, ‘I don’t have any money on me. You have to pay to get in.’

‘It’s ok’ Kevin answered confidently back as they moved quickly along the path and back towards the town. ‘I have money on me. What kind of a guy would I be if I didn’t pay?’

Kevin didn’t remember much of what happened shortly after that. He remembered reaching the club, and the music, and the drinking.

He remembered stepping outside for a time midway through, smoking a cigarette, and that is when he met Corry.

He didn’t remember much of the night, but he remembered Corry.

They spoke at first what was only briefly outside the club, and Corry told him he lived in an apartment above the club.

‘You live above a club?’ Kevin had said, ‘isn’t that loud for you?’

‘Yeah’ Corry had shrugged, ‘but the rent is cheap.’

They went around the back of the club, heading up the stairs to the small balcony above that ran along the back of the building.

Kevin waited behind Corry as he fumbled with his keys, in his tipsy state he struggled to unlock the door, struggled to see in the dim light. But eventually he got it open.

He turned and grabbed Kevin by the front of his shirt, pulling him into the apartment and slamming the door behind them.

Kevin glanced about the apartment briefly as Corry kissed his neck. The apartment was a single open and spacious room, a bed by a wall, a small open kitchen, and a bathroom through a door in the corner.

Kevin turned his attention back to Corry then, grinning slyly, his head feeling light.

He grabbed Corry's head, lifting his chin up and kissing him on the lips, as Corry pushed him back onto the bed, kneeling over him.

Kevin grasped him tightly as he kissed him, feeling his body, his hands moving downwards.

Kevin sat up sharply then, pushing Corry to the side and moving on top of him now. Kevin flinched, as Corry grasped him firmly between the legs. He slapped Corry's hand away, pinning him to the bed and biting his neck and shoulders and chest, his free hand fumbling to unzip Corry's trousers.

Kevin drew back quickly, grabbing the top of Corry's trousers and pulling them down.

It was dark in the apartment, the room was lit only by the faint streetlight that shone through the window from the world outside, and it was just the two of them, alone here now.

As Kevin threw his own trousers to the floor, completely naked now, his mobile fell from his pocket, landing with a light thud on the carpet.

Kevin bore over Corry, lifting his legs up. Corry laughed playfully then, trying to sit up, but Kevin pushed him down forcefully.

Kevin froze suddenly.

He lingered there for a moment, gazing into his face, inches away, before leaning closer, and kissing him again, this time tenderly.

He began to play with Corry, jerking his hand back and forth quickly, but stopping before he went too far.

He moved his hand around, slipping his fingers into him. Corry began to moan.

Kevin played with him for a time, before pushing himself into him.

He hooked his arm around the back of Corry's leg, lifting it up.

He began to thrust into him forcefully, Corry raising his hands up, hugging Kevin around the neck as Kevin had his way.

The next morning Kevin was woken early by a loud noise.

He groaned, pushing himself up, resting on his elbows.

He had been lying on his front in bed, it was warm in the room now, humid.

Kevin glanced over towards the window, the blinds were only half lowered, letting the light from the morning outside shine into the room brightly.

Beside him on the bed Corry lay on his back, head turned to the side. Kevin looked down at his chest, admiring his naked body then.

He began to think of what more he could do to him, when the noise that had woken him in the first place sounded again.

Kevin groaned, hand going to his head, he was extremely hung over.

He heard a voice calling through the door, and he glanced over towards it as it opened.

‘Ah jeez close the door’ he rasped, holding up his hand to shield his eyes. ‘It’s too bright out there.’

‘Are you fucking kidding me?’ came a voice he recognised.

‘Rachel is that you?’ Kevin mumbled, as Corry beside him sat up gingerly, groaning.

‘Who are you?’ Corry grumbled, speaking to Rachel as she closed the door and approached the bed. ‘What are you doing in my apartment?’

‘I’m here looking for Kevin’ Rachel glowered, standing by the bed now and looming over the boys. ‘Several guys said they saw you come up here last night.’

‘Wait...’ Kevin gasped, reaching down beside the bed. ‘Let me get my phone.’

‘I’ve been texting and ringing you for ages’ Rachel complained loudly. ‘You didn’t answer.’

‘Oh yeah’ Kevin said, blinking wearily at his phone before rubbing his eyes tiredly. ‘Dude, I’ve got a ton of messages and missed calls from you. And Christina too. Aww she said she didn’t want to come out last night, because of work and school and stuff. Well that’s just too bad, bit late now though....’ He finished in a mumble. ‘Why did you want to know so badly where I was?’ Kevin asked Rachel then, dropping his mobile on his lap as beside him Corry turned his eyes on her also.

‘Who’s this?’ Corry asked. ‘Is she your girlfriend?’

‘Nah’ Kevin replied casually. ‘And no’ he said speaking to Rachel before she could open her mouth. ‘He’s not my boyfriend either.’

‘What are you doing?’ Rachel demanded. ‘Why are you here?’

‘I was just having a good time’ Kevin mumbled carelessly.

‘I thought you said you weren’t looking for a relationship’ Rachel spat.

‘Why are you so angry?’ Kevin asked her calmly.

‘And why are you still here’ Corry asked her sourly.

‘You just wanted me for my body?’ Rachel complained. ‘I thought we could have been something’ Rachel said to him. ‘You were just using me at that party when we.....’

‘Awww it’s that what’s bothering you?’ Kevin laughed at her in amusement.

‘I thought you were straight.’

‘You think I’m gay?’ Kevin grinned.

‘You’re in bed with another guy’ Rachel called.

‘Stop yelling’ Corry hissed.

‘Are you naked under there?’ Rachel asked, grabbing the bedsheets suddenly.

‘Hey!’

Rachel threw she sheets back, exposing both of their naked bodies.

‘Rachel stop it!’ Kevin growled.

‘Were you just toying with me?!’ Rachel screeched at Kevin then.

‘God will you shut her up!’ Corry snapped.

‘Rachel’ Kevin said to her, his lips curling back in a snarl as he pulled the sheets back to cover himself. ‘What’s your problem?’

‘My problem?’ Rachel snapped, ‘you....’ she gritted her teeth in annoyance. ‘You were using me!’

‘What?’

‘You were just using me’ Rachel echoed. ‘Why are you with this guy?’

‘Are you leaving now?’ Corry grumbled then, ‘I’m speaking to both of you’ he said turning to Kevin.

‘Yeah man’ Kevin said rising to his feet. ‘I’m outta here.’

‘Why are you with *this* guy?’ Rachel demanded again, as Kevin began to quickly dress. ‘I thought you weren’t gay.’

‘I’m not gay’ Kevin mumbled, ‘and can you keep your voice down?’

‘What do you mean you’re not gay?’ Rachel sneered, ‘you’re with another guy.’

‘Nah that was just for fun’ Kevin replied. ‘That doesn’t make me gay.’

‘Is that all is it then? Just for fun?’

‘Hey will you both get out of here?’ Corry said to both of them angrily, ‘you’re being too loud. Plus I have to get to work.’

‘Alright I’m going man’ Kevin sighed.

‘And take her with you.’

Kevin straightened, having put his trousers back on. He frowned at Rachel, still weary from the night before, still tired and hung over, he felt drained.

‘How can you act this way?’ Rachel demanded. ‘You were just using me.’

‘No more than you were using me’ Kevin replied flatly. ‘We were both drunk and having a good time.’

‘That’s not it’ Rachel said, growing angrier and stomping her foot in rage.

‘Oh, so you wanted something more’ Kevin raised an eyebrow. ‘I told you the other day didn’t I? I’m not interested.’

‘So, you love a dead girl more than real people?’

‘Watch it’ Kevin spoke dangerously then, feeling a flicker of anger coursing through him.

‘What? That’s why you do this isn’t it? You don’t care for your body. It’s all physical. You’re afraid to love again.’

Before Kevin could answer, Corry called out to them again.

‘Hey! I’m not going to ask you again. Both of you leave. I have to get ready and you’re both pissing me off!’

Kevin stormed out of the apartment after that, feeling agitated and angry. He didn’t speak to Rachel again, wishing only to get away from her.

He headed back to the home he stayed at with Alex and his parents. The place where he lived now. It would only be for a short time.

He walked back through the streets quickly, heading towards the housing estate, checking his phone briefly.

There were several missed calls, and when he checked the number, he realised it was Justin.

Kevin grimaced, closing his phone and pocketing it.

He didn't call Justin back, and thought nothing more of him.  
He didn't care what Justin wanted.

It took him ages to return to the home, along the way he stopped to buy a drink, and then stopped again to buy a sandwich.

'Shit I'm running out of money' he said counting what was left.

His mobile began to ring.

'Hey Christina' he said answering it immediately.

'Where the fuck have you been?'

'I was out clubbing.'

'I've been trying to call you' Christina said to him from down the line. 'Have you got bad signal or something?'

'Sorry I didn't hear it ring.'

'I've got some good news for you.'

Kevin perked up then, listening intently to her.

'Go on' he prompted.

'You're going to get your job back.'

Kevin couldn't help but cry out in relief at this.

'Really?' he said. 'Do you mean it?'

'Yeah' Christina replied, 'do you want to come over or what?'

'Are you there now?'

'Yeah, I came over early to talk to the boss. He's here for only a few hours if you want to talk to him. Hurry up and you'll catch him, he's going out later.'

'Ok I'll be right there.'

He ate his sandwich quickly and turned on the spot, jogging down the street.

He moved swiftly through the town, crossing the traffic carefully, slowing down as he reached the restaurant.

'There you are' Christina said as he hurried past her.

'Oh hey' he fumbled. 'I uh...'

'He's in the back' Christina pointed.

Kevin mumbled a thanks and hurried past her, heading through the restaurant and into the kitchen.

His boss was waiting for him. Christian had told him that he had been coming.

It had been an anxious time for Kevin, but after speaking with him for quite some time, he agreed to give Kevin his job back.

'Thank you so much' Kevin had said. 'I promise I won't let you down.'

He met Christina in the restaurant immediately after that.

She had been waiting for him.

'How did it go?' she asked him quickly.

‘I got my job back’ Kevin grinned awkwardly, feeling a little flustered.  
 Christina let out a sigh of relief, smiling too.  
 ‘Thank god.’  
 ‘I know you put in a good word for me.’  
 ‘Of course,’ she beamed. ‘You know I would do that for you.’  
 ‘Why are you still here by the way?’ Kevin asked. ‘Shouldn’t you be in school?’  
 ‘Nope’ she said cheerily. ‘I got lessons later.’  
 ‘No rest for the wicked’ Kevin sighed tiredly.  
 ‘And what about you?’ Christina asked. ‘You got class?’  
 ‘Later today’ Kevin said. ‘I think I’m going home now.’  
 ‘What home is that then?’  
 ‘I’m staying with a friend’ Kevin replied simply. ‘What about you?’ he asked. ‘You got this thing sorted with your friend?’  
 ‘It’ll take a while’ Christina spoke quietly, ‘but she’s gone home now. I’ll see her again soon.’  
 ‘Jane was it?’  
 ‘Yes’ Christina nodded. ‘That was her name.’  
 Kevin nodded slowly at that.  
 ‘What are you going to do now?’  
 ‘You know what?’ Kevin said. ‘I don’t feel like going to school at all today.’  
 ‘Ok?’ Christina laughed.  
 ‘I think I’m just going to go home and crash.’  
 ‘Sure’ Christina nodded. ‘I’ll catch you later then I suppose.’  
 ‘Take it easy’ Kevin said turning away from her. ‘See you around.’

## Chapter Nineteen

### A Dark Place

Alex was not there when Kevin reached the home, the quiet housing estate. Alex’s mother let him in, offering him food, but Kevin declined.  
 ‘I think I’m just going to rest’ Kevin had said to her.  
 ‘Ok dear’ Alex’s mother said.  
 ‘Where’s Alex?’  
 ‘He’s at school’ she replied. ‘I’m surprised you’re not there.’  
 ‘Nah’ Kevin smiled weakly. ‘I got class later.’  
 ‘You’re not going?’  
 ‘I don’t really feel up to it’ Kevin admitted. ‘I probably won’t go out today. I’m kinda hung over, I was out last night and uh...’ he smiled awkwardly then. ‘I think I had too much to drink.’  
 ‘That isn’t good for you’ she frowned. ‘You shouldn’t do that. What would your parents think?’

‘They don’t know’ Kevin admitted reluctantly. ‘I haven’t spoken to them in ages. They moved away and....’ Kevin trailed off then.

‘Oh, I see.’

‘I’m trying to make my own way in life now. You know I’m adopted and.... they’re not my real parents. I forget sometimes though.’ He smiled. ‘I just don’t want to be a burden on them.’

Kevin slept on the sofa now, trying to clear his head, trying to recover from his hangover.

His head hurt, and his mouth felt dry and tasted sour.

He had a single piece of toast and a drink of water before lying down, and he felt exhausted again. He fell asleep quickly, descending into his dreams fast. The house around him was silent.

What came to him now was a memory.

*‘Sarah’ Kevin gasped, reaching the top of the stairs and finding her kneeling on the floor.*

*He rushed up to her, falling to his knees before her and placing his hands on her shoulders.*

*‘Sarah what’s wrong?’*

*‘I just can’t do this’ she sobbed. ‘I can’t I’m so alone...’*

*‘Oh Sarah’ Kevin whispered, his heart tearing in his chest.*

*It pained him so much to see her like this, but there was nothing he could do.*

*‘There’s two of them’ Sarah gasped, chest rising as falling as she breathed deeply.*

*‘They’re.... both from my past....one of them.... he always says my name over and over. I don’t know what he wants.’*

*Kevin watched Sarah calmly, keeping silent. He waited for her to go on.*

*‘The other voice tells me to go different places...but there are more...’*

*She raised her head then, eyes pleading and full of tears.*

*‘It’s hard to even put sentences together’ she rasped, ‘or to even explain anything.....to be outside my own home...my place of comfort.... I...’ she gritted her teeth, swallowing the lump in her throat. ‘They’re all so cruel to me, so negative and always negative. Never anything good. And I cannot sleep.’ She began to sob, bowing her head, her black hair falling about her face. ‘It really affects me....and wears me out...and I’m afraid all the time. They keep teasing me and...I don’t think.... they.... they keep telling me I’m going to die.’*

*‘Sarah please just don’t think about it.’*

*‘I can’t block them out’ Sarah cried. ‘I just can’t they’re.... always there.’*

*Kevin embraced her then, holding her tightly as she cried into his shoulder.*

*‘It’s going to be alright’ he said to her. ‘Don’t give up and lose hope.’*

*‘I’m not going to make it’ Sarah whimpered. ‘I’m not going to make it....my tests results at the hospital...’*

*‘Don’t think about it’ Kevin spoke to her harshly now. ‘Just think about me, and the life we’re going to have together...once all of this is over, and you are better. We’re going to have a life together.... children...’*

*‘I want that’ Sarah shuddered. ‘I.... I want that....’*

*It was just three weeks later, and she was dead.*

*Kevin didn't remember much of what happened after that. All he remembered from those early days, was the pain.*

*He was screaming at his parents. At home now. They tried to comfort him, to console him, but he was inconsolable.*

*Kevin collapsed to his knees, sobbing into his hands hysterically.*

*All he remembered was saying the words over and over.*

*'This isn't happening. This isn't happening! She was supposed to be ok! Why did this have to happen? Why did she have to die? We had our life planned out.....we had it planned out...'*

Kevin opened his eyes, heart beating fast in his chest.

He sat up, head instantly hurting.

He leaned forwards with his elbows on his knees, head in his hands.

There came a knock on the door. Kevin tensed, glancing up nervously.

He sat up a little straighter then, staring towards the door.

There was movement, Alex's mother opened the door.

Kevin felt an instant twinge of nervousness as he saw a police officer at the door. They were asking for him.

Kevin's heart knotted in his chest, his stomach flipped over as he heard his name being spoken, the voice a little hard to hear from where he sat. He could partially see the door from where he sat.

He saw Alex's mother turn, staring at him in shock.

Kevin was frozen to the spot on the sofa, feeling a little afraid now.

He forced himself to stand, moving over towards the door.

'Are you Kevin?' one of the two men asked him as he moved to stand beside the mother.

'I um...yes. What's wrong?'

'I think you should come with us' the officer said.

'Why?'

'We just want to speak to you. If you don't mind coming with us.'

Kevin glanced past the men, seeing a police car parked before the house.

Everything suddenly seemed to wrong and out of place. Kevin didn't understand what was happening.

He went down to the station with the men.

Kevin sat in the seat, suddenly pale, frozen in horror.

‘Rape?’

‘That’s what she told us’ the male officer who sat opposite him replied.

They were in a small empty room now, and it was just Kevin and the policeman.

‘I....’ Kevin shook his head. ‘Oh my god.....’

He bowed his head, holding his head in both his hands now.

‘I can’t believe this is happening. This can’t be happening.’

‘Maybe if you told us what happened from your point of view’ the man said to him, speaking firmly.

‘It didn’t happen’ Kevin spoke loudly, louder than intended.

‘There’s no need to get defensive, we just want to find out what happened.’

‘I.... I didn’t do it’ Kevin fumbled.

‘Did you have sex with her?’

Kevin stared at the man, mouth dry.

‘Uh’ he croaked. ‘Yes’ he answered weakly.

‘Was it consensual?’

‘Hu?’

‘Were you drinking that night?’

‘Yeah?’

‘What she drinking that night?’

‘Uh.’

‘Was she sober or not?’

Kevin stared at the man.

‘Oh my god...’

‘It’s not consensual sex if she was not in her right state of mind.’

‘No’ Kevin shook his head then in agitation. ‘She wanted it. I swear I would never force myself on *anyone*. I swear I didn’t.’

‘Did she give you consent?’

He felt the sickness rising in him.

Kevin swallowed the lump in his throat, before getting angry then.

‘I didn’t rape her!’

‘Calm down or we’ll be forced to restrain you.’

Kevin glanced down then, seeing handcuffs on the table.

He gritted his teeth, feeling tears in his eyes, and fear, anger and panic threatened to overwhelm him.

He grasped his head, feeling pain inside his chest.

‘I can’t believe this is happening...’

Kevin was released a few hours later. It wasn't over. There would be consequences, but they were not detaining him.

'As if I could run' Kevin had said. 'I've nowhere to go.'

He stood on the street corner now, having walked down the road from the station. He stopped before the traffic, hand going to his mouth, feeling physically sick.

His mobile began to ring in his pocket.

Kevin was snapped out of his trance, reaching for it.

'Christina?' he mumbled.

'Is it true?'

Kevin choked back a sob, eyes brimming with tears.

'N-no it isn't true!' he shouted down the phone. 'How can you say that! Do you think I would ever do that!?'

'Everyone is talking in school.'

'What?'

'Everyone knows.'

The silence was ringing in his ears as Kevin stood there.

Trapped in a sudden sense of unreality.

He felt outside his own body.

Kevin approached his school, walking at a march with his fists balled.

Christina was waiting for him at the gates of the school, but he just walked past her.

'Kevin where are you going?'

But he ignored her, looking for only one person.

He found her quickly, around the front of the school. She was standing talking with her friends. She turned just as Kevin approached her.

Kevin grabbed her roughly by the shoulder, shaking her.

'What have you done?!' he shouted at her. 'What are you doing!?'

'Let go of me' she screamed back, trying to break free of him.

He pulled her back, shaking her again.

'What have you done?!' he howled at her again. 'You've ruined my life?! You've ruined my life! Do you have any idea what you've done?'

Rachel looked afraid then, eyes wide as she stared back at him.

Kevin was grabbed from behind suddenly as someone pulled him around. It was some guy that Kevin did not know.

'You fucking let go of her' the man snapped.

'Fuck off' Kevin retorted, shoving the guy away.

The guy grabbed him again, and Kevin immediately fought back.

'Stop' Christina screeched, coming between the two. 'Don't fight.'

Everyone was staring at them now, and people were beginning to gather.

‘I heard what you did to Rachel’ the man snapped. ‘You’re fucking disgusting. I’m going to fucking kill you!’

‘It’s not true’ Kevin hissed back angrily. ‘She lied.’

‘Why would she lie?’

‘Rachel you’re going to fucking pay for this’ Kevin pointed at her.

‘You leave her out of this’ the guy said to Kevin snarling.

‘That little slut fucking lied!’

The guy was enraged then, he shoved Christina aside, charging for Kevin and grabbing his head. Kevin grabbed the man back, using his momentum to try to throw him to the ground.

Kevin was vaguely aware of people shouting around them, Christina screaming, calling for help.

The teachers broke them up, but Kevin ran away from them, breaking from the group that had gathered. He ran back out of the school, as fast as he could, feeling pain in his body. But he had not been fighting long enough to be seriously hurt.

He ran back to the only place that was of comfort to him. The bridge that Sarah had jumped from, the place she had died.

He ran through the town, panting and gasping with exhaustion.

But he did not stop, not until he reached the place.

## Chapter Twenty

### A Way Out

Kevin stood on the bridge, on the same side Sarah had stood, when Kevin had let go of her hand three years ago.

Kevin clenched his teeth, he swallowed the lump in his throat, before bowing his head, grasping his hair.

‘I’m sorry’ Kevin gasped, ‘I told you I would live a meaningful life. I’m sorry that I failed you.’

He relaxed his body then, leaning forwards.

He laid his hands upon the top of the wall, letting out a sigh.

‘I’ve been living a meaningless life’ Kevin mumbled. ‘I should have done better. I’m sorry.’

He stood there for the longest time, just staring at the ground beneath him.

His mobile began to ring suddenly, and he answered the call.

‘What do you want Christina?’

‘Kevin, where are you? I’m worried.’

‘I’m fine.’

‘Where are you?’

‘Does it matter?’ Kevin gritted his teeth, balling his fists.

‘Just calm down’ Christina said to him. ‘Everything’s going to be alright.’

‘I know it is’ Kevin smiled.

‘Where are you?’

‘I’m at the last place I spoke to Sarah’ Kevin answered calmly. ‘This place gives me peace. It also gives me great sadness.’

Kevin heard Christina sigh on the phone.

‘They can’t prove anything’ Christina said. ‘I don’t believe the allegations.’

‘I didn’t do it’ Kevin hissed at her over the phone. ‘She’s lying.’

‘I know.’

Kevin let out a sigh, trying to calm himself.

‘I think you should stay with me’ Christina told him.

‘Why?’

‘Alex’s parents don’t want you staying with them anymore. Oh, and you’ve lost your job.... again...’

Kevin stood silently, phone still held to his ear.

Kevin entered Christina’s apartment, standing there with his hands in his pocket, feeling sour. He felt his mobile begin to ring. Kevin pulled it out, looking at the screen as behind him Christina closed the door.

Justin was calling him.

‘Are you fucking serious?’ Kevin hissed at his phone, hanging up the call.

‘What is it?’ Christina asked moving around him.

‘It’s Justin’ Kevin glowered, putting the phone back in his pocket. ‘He’s trying to call me again.’

‘Oh waw’ Christina said. ‘Really? I wonder what he could possibly want.’

‘Yeah’ Kevin mumbled. ‘And I have no idea. He’s probably mad I escaped. He still wants to control me. He probably wants me back.’

‘Are you going to go back?’

‘What are you kidding?’ Kevin asked her straightening. ‘He handcuffed me to a bed.....it’s not funny.’

‘I’m sorry’ Christina said sniggering. ‘I um...just have this image of you chained to a bed stuck in my head now.’

Kevin stared at her flatly.

‘So um.... anyway’ Christina said collecting herself. ‘I said that you could stay here. But it has to be only for a short time. I’m not allowed tenants. If I’m found out...’

‘Yeah I know, you could get in trouble’ Kevin waved her away. ‘Thank you for helping me. It really means a lot to me.’

‘I know’ Christina smiled. ‘I would do anything I could for you, you know that.’

‘Yeah’ Kevin nodded.

‘So, are you hungry? I got some food. We could watch a movie together?’

‘What about your friend?’

‘Jane’s back home now’ Christina replied. ‘I’m seeing her again much later. This thing is still going on.... its going to take some time....life isn’t easy...’ Christina finished trailing off.

‘You’re telling me.’

‘So do you have any money?’ Christina asked him.

‘A little’ Kevin said feeling a twinge of uncertainty. ‘I still need.... ah... I still need a job. And I need a place to stay.’

‘If it came down to it’ Christina offered, ‘you could stay with Justin again. I’m sure he would be glad to have you back.’

‘Hu’ Kevin laughed humorously. ‘Yeah I’m sure. He just wants something to fuck. I’m beyond tired of him.’

Christina began to laugh quietly to herself at that.

‘You’re so funny’ she said, trying to hide her smile behind her hand.

‘I wasn’t joking.’

‘I know’ she said lowering her hand again. ‘Anyway. I didn’t have any plans for tonight. We could snuggle on the sofa and watch a film if you like’ she suggested again. ‘It’ll be getting dark soon, and it’s going to be cold tonight, so we have to get real close under the blankets to keep warm. What do you say?’

‘Sure’ Kevin shrugged. ‘Why not?’

Kevin slept on the sofa again that night, he was getting tired of it, but Christina would not let him sleep in her bed, because she liked to sleep like a starfish, or so she claimed.

‘I don’t like people in my space’ she had said.

‘What are you talking about? I’m in your space all the time.’

‘I like to be comfortable when I sleep’ she had winked at him. ‘No one in my way. Goodnight!’

And so once again, Kevin slept on the sofa, and he was uncomfortable.

He didn’t sleep well that night, his night fraught with worry, for Rachel, for his life, his actions, for Sarah, of hatred and regret, but also for Justin as well.

He woke early the next morning, sitting up and turning the TV on. He watched with tired eyes for about an hour until Christina finally appeared.

‘Oh, you’re awake already?’ she said. ‘Sleep well? Great. I gotta go.’

‘Where are you going? He asked her in a tired voice.

‘I have to meet someone’ she said hastily, not looking at him.

‘No work or school?’

‘No, I’m going to meet someone, and I’m going to be late.’

‘It’s early isn’t it?’ Kevin mumbled, but she didn’t reply.

She ran out the door without even having breakfast, grabbing a jumper hanging on the back of the door as she went.

Kevin stared after her, left alone once the front door had slammed shut.

Kevin felt lost in the sudden silence, though the TV was still on.

The apartment felt empty without Christina, and Kevin quickly became bored.

Several hours later, he had opened the curtains, and stood at the window now, just staring out at the streets below him at the people. He stayed here for ages, just looking, thoroughly bored.

He didn't want to go to school, he couldn't, not now with what had happened. And he had no job to go to either, thanks to Rachel. He didn't want to go outside at all and meet people. Not now.

He wandered about the apartment listlessly for a time, simply going from room to room, then he tidied a bit, watched some TV, washed the dishes, stood by the window some more.

It was boring.

He was staring out of the window when his mobile that sat on the kitchen table began to ring. Kevin glanced over at it, seeing the number, and Justin's name appear on the screen.

'Him again?' Kevin mumbled to himself, watching the phone move across the table as it vibrated with each ring.

'What does he want?' he groaned.

The phone stopped ringing after time, and Kevin turned to look back out of the window again.

He quickly grew bored, moving to sit on the sofa again.

He began to think about things, then he began to think about other things.

Kevin let out a sigh, his hand going to his trousers. He unbuttoned his trousers, slipping his hand into his pants.

He began to touch himself, slowly at first, resting his head back against the sofa.

Christina came home just as he finished.

'Are you fucking serious!?' she said to him, putting down her bags on the table. 'Do you have to do that here?'

Kevin ignored her, letting out a sigh, body relaxing as he slumped back.

'God that felt so good' he gasped. 'Oh, hey Christina.'

He pulled his hand away.

Christina entered the room then, throwing a clean kitchen towel at his face, Kevin pulled it off him with a frown.

'What the hell man?'

'Don't *'what the hell man'* me' Christina snapped. 'Have you really been just sitting here all day?'

'So what if I have?'

'Are you sulking?'

'No' Kevin glowered back at her. 'I just.... don't feel like going out, that's all. Do I have to go out? Do I have to go out every single day?'

Kevin's mobile began to ring again, and as he leant forwards, cleaning his hand on the towel, he saw that it was Justin again.

'You should at least be going out to find a job or a place of your own' Christina suggested.

'You know you can't stay here. The longer the stay the riskier it is for me.'

'I know I'm sorry' Kevin mumbled, 'I'm sorry alright?'

'Its fine. You know I just want to help you.'

'Yeah I'm sorry. I don't mean to get upset.'

'Its fine' Christina spoke sadly. 'I just want to see you do well.'

‘Yeah thanks.’

‘I spoke to Rachel’ Christina said to him. ‘She’s going to drop the charge.’

Kevin tensed slightly upon hearing Rachel’s name, sitting up a little straighter then.

‘It won’t matter’ he said. ‘It will be on my record forever.’

‘No’ Christina said. ‘Justin spoke to me. He said he can wipe your record clean, and he will.... if you go back to him.’

Kevin turned slowly to face her, staring at her silently.

‘Must be nice to have money and power eh?’ Christina said casually to him.

His mobile began to ring again. It was Justin. Again.

‘You might want to answer that’ Christina said. ‘He’s offering to help you.’

‘At what cost?’ Kevin voiced, speaking to no one in particular.

He let the mobile ring for several moments, until it fell silent.

## Chapter Twenty-One

### The Start of a New Chapter

Kevin lingered in this strange place, it felt to him like the longest time, a lifetime, but in reality, it was just a few days.

On one day when Kevin did decide to leave Christina’s apartment, he saw something different.

Christiana, with another man.

Kevin had come across them both by chance that day, and he watched them now together in the park, he saw the way Christina looked at the man she was with, the way they held each other, the light in both their eyes.

They were in love. Christina was in love.

‘When did that happen?’ Kevin wondered to himself. ‘Why did I not see? I’ve been so out of touch with the world.’

He felt his mobile ring again in his pocket, but this time, he didn’t even look to see who it was.

He already knew.

A day later, he decided to go back to school.

It was difficult, everyone shunned him, and so Kevin kept to himself.

He never spoke to Rachel again, and Kevin decided to simply wait for things to run its course. Things may not go back to the way they used to be, but Kevin felt that he could find a

new 'normal', life was always changing, and Kevin decided he would never give up, for Sarah's sake. For the sake of her memory.

Christina had convinced Rachel to drop the charge, but the damage still remained. He was un-hireable now, because of it being on record.

He sat in the school grounds now, alone at the edge of the field, watching the people playing football, hearing the noises around him.

His mobile began to ring again, and this time, Kevin answered it.

'What do you want? Why are you harassing me?'

'I want to talk to you' Justin replied.

'Why?'

'I heard of what happened, and I can help you.'

'Christiana told me what you said to her' Kevin replied.

'I want to help you' Justin said again down the line.

'What for?'

'Don't you want this to be over?'

Kevin sighed.

'I can make it so that your records are wiped clean. It will be like this never happened. I can help you.'

Kevin swallowed.

'All I ask' Justin said, 'is that you come back to me.'

'Why do you want me so badly?'

'I just love to control' Justin replied, and Kevin could hear the smile in his voice. 'I love the way you feel.'

'You want to fuck me again?'

'Yes.'

Kevin let out another sigh, his grip on the mobile tightening ever so slightly.

'What do I have to do to get you to stop chasing me?'

There was silence on the phone.

'Alright' Kevin sighed. 'I.... I will go back with you. I don't really have anywhere to stay anyway, I can't stay with Christina much longer...'

'You can stay with me' Justin offered over the phone. 'I can meet you after school.'

Kevin remained silent for a moment, before speaking.

'Fine' he said. 'I'll meet you afterschool at the gates.'

When the day was over, Kevin walked slowly towards the gates, and found Justin waiting there for him.

It was strange to see him again, after everything that had happened, after being away from him for so many days.

'It's done' Justin said. 'This problem no longer exists.'

'Thank you' Kevin breathed. 'I.... I really appreciate it.' He swallowed the lump in his throat. 'I guess I owe you now.'

Justin dipped his head at that.

‘Why are you so desperate to own me?’ Kevin asked again.

‘Because it makes me feel good.’

‘You like to control?’

‘Yes.’

‘What about that other man?’

Justin hesitated then.

‘Who was he?’ Kevin asked. ‘Don’t you want *him as well*?’

‘I do’ Justin breathed. ‘I want you both.’

‘Now you’re just being greedy’ Kevin mumbled turning away.

‘I would like you to meet him.’

‘I don’t want to’ Kevin said shortly. ‘I don’t want to be used as a toy by him too.’

‘You want to stay with me?’

‘No. I want to be free from all of this’ Kevin sighed. ‘I want a job. I want my own job. I want my own place.’

‘No’ Justin breathed, stepping closer to him, caressing his chin, tilting his head back. ‘I want you to myself. I want you all to myself.’

Kevin opened his mouth then as Justin leaned towards him, it was an action that was now automatic, and he did it without thinking. Kevin felt Justin slip his tongue into him as he kissed him. He didn’t care that they were out in public or who saw them, and it seemed that even Justin had forgotten to be discrete.

‘You’re a good boy’ Justin purred to him as he leant back again, caressing his cheek. ‘Aren’t you?’

‘Yes’ Kevin breathed, ‘.... master.’

Justin’s eyes shone with excitement at these words, as his hand moved down to Kevin’s throat, grasping it, his thumb digging painfully into him. But Kevin did not resist.

‘I want you...’ Justin said, ‘on your knees. You look good with a chain around your neck.’

Kevin said nothing, his eyes distant as Justin continued to stare down at him. He released his hold on Kevin’s throat, stepping back slightly.

‘Let’s go home’ Justin said, ‘I want....’ but he never finished his sentence, only trailing off.

When Justin was done with him, he fell asleep in the bed. Kevin lay beside him, facing away, staring at the wall. He was wide awake. Beside him Justin slept peacefully.

Kevin turned back to him, his body aching all over.

He stared at Justin for a moment, before sitting up, and pulling the sheets back.

He rose to his feet, unclasping the collar and chain from around his neck and dropping them on the bed silently.

He glanced back at Justin as he moved away from the bed, picking up his clothes as silently as he could before leaving the room.

By the time Justin woke sometime later, Kevin was already gone.

It was shortly after this, that Kevin decided he had had enough. He didn't want Justin anymore, but not only that. He decided he wanted Justin to not want him anymore. He decided, that he would tell the whole world Justin's secret, no matter what the outcome. He decided, that it was the only way for Justin to let him be go, to not chase him anymore. Kevin had gotten what he wanted, and living with Justin had been an experience, but he decided, that it was time to move on, once and for all.

'So, would you like to have me?'

Justin turned to stare at Kevin.

'I'm...ready for you' Kevin said acting shy, bowing his head and weaving his fingers together before him, 'if you would like...'

Justin did not hesitate. He moved towards Kevin without pause, hand slipping around the back of his neck as he leant forwards. Kevin opened his mouth slightly as Justin kissed him, slipping his tongue into his mouth, bearing over him.

'Let's take this to my bedroom' Justin said, standing so close to him.

'Are you going to tie me up?'

'Do you want me to tie you up?'

Kevin clenched his teeth then, staring up at Justin a little flustered, a little breathless.

'I.... want you... to do what you want' he gasped.

Justin bowed his head slightly, eyes calm.

He took Kevin by the hand then, walking away and pulling him along.

Justin dragged Kevin up the stairs, Kevin stumbled at least once as he was taken. They went to the bedroom and Justin closed the door, rounding on him.

The curtains were partially open, giving them privacy and yet lighting the room enough to be comfortable enough to see.

Justin paused for a moment, half turned from the closed door, Kevin watched him a little nervously, simply waiting. He could never predict Justin's appetite, could never know what he was in the mood for. He could only wait to find out.

This time, it seemed that Justin was in a gentler mood, and he approached Kevin carefully.

Kevin allowed himself to be pushed back onto the bed, Justin bearing over him, pinning him there, trapping him.

Kevin glanced to the side as Justin bowed his head, kissing Kevin's neck. Kevin stared away towards the dresser as Justin continued to bite his neck tenderly, hand running down Kevin's body and caressing him between the legs before slipping beneath his trousers. Kevin saw the lens of the camera upon the dresser, the camera itself hidden by an item of clothing.

Kevin looked ahead again, facing up towards the ceiling as Justin moved back to pull his trousers down, taking off his own. He undressed quickly before taking the rest of Kevin's clothes off, the two completely naked on the bed now.

Justin paused for a moment then, reaching over to the bedside table and opening the top drawer, pulling from it a length of rope. He carefully bound Kevin's wrists together, before tying him to the head of the bed, so that he could not move.

'Stay still for me' Justin said, running his hand up and down himself as he whispered into Kevin's ear, '.... stay submissive for me...'

'Yes....' Kevin breathed, as Justin slipped first one finger, then two into him, '.... *master...*' Justin leant back slightly, gazing into Kevin's face as he lay there, completely naked beneath him, chest bare, arms tied above his head.

'There's a good boy' Justin breathed, hand winding around Kevin's thigh, lifting his leg up and pushing himself in.

Kevin grimaced at first in pain, then let out a moan as he began to relax, feeling Justin's large size thrusting into him as he lay on the bed with his legs apart.

'Oh yeah' Kevin moaned in pleasure, feeling Justin deep within. 'Fuck me harder.... fuck me harder *daddy!*'

Justin's eyes flashed then, and he thrust more forcefully into Kevin, who cried out in pain now.

'Do I have to gag you?' Justin hissed threateningly into Kevin's ear, pausing suddenly, hand wrapped around Kevin's throat.

He bit into his shoulder then, Kevin whimpering in pain, Justin's other hand that grasped his shoulder tensed suddenly, nails digging into his flesh. Justin was becoming increasingly more savage with every thrust.

He pulled out of Kevin suddenly then, forcefully turning him over onto his front.

'I will make this last' he hissed into his ear, 'I will make you beg me to stop.'

He thrust into Kevin again, and Kevin cried out in pain, his wrists still bound together, he pawed at the bedsheets, body tense as Justin lay on top of him, thrusting hard into him again and again. But Kevin knew this would not be over soon, Justin had stamina as well as size. He was savage, a beast.

Kevin turned his head to the side, gritting his teeth as his eyes watered, looking over towards the camera again as Justin fucked him.

His breath came in short sharp gasps as he stared, before turning away, burying his face into the pillows, as Justin, having mounted him, continued to use Kevin to pleasure himself.

The next day Kevin woke very late, the events of the previous evening having thoroughly exhausted him.

It was after midday now, he had been awake for several hours, and sat now on the sofa, his body aching. He simply rested.

Justin had left early that day to tend to his own business. When he came back, he was in a rage.

'What have you done?!'

Kevin turned to glance around, Justin had just burst through the door of the apartment, slamming it behind him.

‘What have you done?!’ Justin repeated.

‘What?’ Kevin replied calmly, still feeling a little tired and worn.

Justin stormed up to him, grabbing him by the front of his shirt and pulling him towards him, their faces inches apart. He spoke in a dangerous whisper now.

‘Did you secretly film us last night?’

Kevin stared up at Justin in alarm, his mind trying to work. He was a little frightened; he had never seen Justin so angry like this.

‘Yes’ he spoke firmly, finally gathering his thoughts. ‘I filmed us secretly. Then I posted it online. Everyone knows your secret now.’

Justin’s fists began to tremble in fury, his teeth bared.

‘How could you do this to me?’ Justin snarled, his body beginning to tremble now. ‘You’ve ruined my life...my reputation....my *career*.’

‘I did it for you’ Kevin replied calmly. ‘It’s time you stopped hiding who you really are.’

Justin pulled a fist back, ready to punch Kevin in the face. Kevin stared up in shock at Justin, eyes wide in fear.

Justin remained there, frozen where he stood, fist raised. His arm began to tremble.

Kevin remained where he was, waiting to see what Justin would do, waiting to see if he would really hit him.

But he didn’t.

Justin just shoved Kevin away, pushing him back onto the sofa.

‘You’ve ruined *everything*!’ Justin screamed at him. ‘How could you do this to me?!’

Justin collapsed on the sofa next to him. Kevin turned calmly to face him, expression level, body tense, eyes wide. He could not undo what he had done, he had to see it through.

‘There’s going to be a conference held at your company’ Kevin spoke calmly to him. ‘People will want to hear your point of view on this.’

‘You want me to go to this?’ Justin spoke in a dead voice.

‘They want us both to go’ Kevin said. ‘They think we are a couple. It’s something that must be cleared up.’

Justin said nothing. He leant forward on his knees, hands over his mouth, eyes wide.

‘You are a public figure’ Kevin told him seriously. ‘You could help many people by being open about who you really are.’

Justin said nothing.

Kevin frowned then, brow furrowed.

‘I think this is an opportunity for you’ he spoke sincerely. ‘Things will never be the same for you again.... but at least you won’t be living a lie anymore.’

Kevin left the apartment, feeling light at heart, feeling free, feeling happy.

He didn’t look back at he made his way through the streets, heading back to his favourite spot on the edge of the town, the bridge surrounded by trees, a place that was silent and beautiful.

This was the last time he had spoken to Sarah, the one he had thought he would spend the rest of his life with.

‘For the first time in years’ he spoke to the air, doing so with a smile upon his lips, ‘I feel happy, I feel free. I feel opportunity, and for the first time since I lost you.... I feel hope.’ He reached into his pocket then, bringing out his mobile, and for the first time since they left, he called his parents, and after that, he called Lisa, his childhood friend. ‘Hey’ he said to her, ‘I’ve got some time on my hands. How would you like to meet up again? This time, I will come to you.’

## Epilogue

It was some days later, when Kevin and Christina were sitting at a café together drinking, that they saw something strange.

‘Hey look at the TV’ Christina voiced suddenly, and Kevin glanced around, watching the TV above the register in the café.

He saw a strange sight indeed, a news article about Justin, and how the public were reacting to his secret finally being revealed after all this time.

Many people were unhappy about it, but most supported him. But that wasn’t the only thing.

‘He’s getting married?’ Kevin grinned in surprise. ‘I can’t believe it.’

‘That’s so sweet’ Christina cooed then, clasping her hands together. ‘Don’t they look so cute together in white?’

‘Wait, is that my old boss?’ Kevin exclaimed.

‘It sure is.’

‘You mean you knew?’ Kevin asked turning to face her.

Christina only grinned knowingly back at him, winking at him teasingly.

‘I guess that’s why he was so upset and fired me so easily’ Kevin sighed. ‘Anyway.... I am glad.’

‘Things are finally working out then’ Christina said.

‘They sure are.’

Kevin rested his chin on his palm, smiling contentedly.

‘Things are still good with your new boyfriend?’

‘They’re great’ Christina beamed. ‘He is wonderful. It won’t be long before we manage to find a place together, then I won’t have to work so hard all the time, because we will be able to support each other.’

‘That’s great, I’m so happy for you.’

‘So, what are you going to do now?’ Christina asked him.

‘I don’t know’ Kevin sighed. ‘I guess I’m going to find my own way and my own place in life. There’s so much out there that I want to see, so many opportunities, so many people to meet and learn from.’ Kevin bowed his head, holding his drink in both his hands, gazing down at it with a smile. ‘Maybe I will travel the world’ he spoke in a distant voice, ‘and do the same thing my parents are doing. After all, the world is out there and its waiting for me.’

Christina grinned widely at that, leaning forwards with an elbow on the table.

‘Where are you going to stay now?’ she asked him.

‘With Lisa.’

‘Oh?’

‘Yeah’ Kevin grinned again. ‘I’m finally moving on. It’s been fun with Justin for a time but.... living with him opened up a door in my mind.... it’s weird you know? I don’t know what it was...I can’t really explain it.... but.... I feel like I can finally let go of the past and move forwards. I’m moving out of this town for good and starting a new life with Lisa. I might even see my parents again.....one day.’

‘That would be amazing.’

‘It would mean we wouldn’t be able to see each other again’ Kevin said to her.

‘It’s ok Christina replied. ‘You meet new people, and you move on. Life is always changing, and if we do never meet again, then we will always have memories of each other, after all....’

Christina lifted her mug then, smiling up at Kevin, ‘the world is out there, and we only have one life. *Live it.*’